

THE ENTERTAINING
TRAVELS
AND
ADVENTURES
OF

Mademoiselle de Richelieu.

COUSIN to the present DUKE of that
NAME

Who made the Tour of *EUROPE*, dressed
in Men's Cloaths, attended by her MAID
LUCY as her *Valet de Chambre*.

Now done into ENGLISH from the LADY's own
MANUSCRIPT.

By the TRANSLATOR of the MEMOIRS and
ADVENTURES of the Marques of *BRE-*
TAGNE and Duke of *HARCOURT*.

V O L III. The Second Edition.

L O N D O N:

Printed and Sold by *S. Ballard* at the
Blue-Ball in *Little-Britain*.

18
S

TRAVELS

AND

ADVENTURES

OF

Mendenhall de Richelieu.

Cousin to the Duke of Richelieu.

IN A M E

Who made the first of EUROPE, dwelt
in many Cities, & visited the East & West
AS AT her first the Countess.

Now none, unless you see from the East's own
M A R T I N

By the Travels of the MEMOIRS and
ADVENTURES of the Princess of B R E
T A G N E & of the KINGDOM.

T O



L O N D O N

Printed and Sold by S. P. & Co. at the
British Museum.

THE
TRAVELS
OF

Mademoiselle de Richelieu.

ON the 20th of September we embarked for Genoa, passed by Cassia a little small Town environed by Mountains, covered with green Olive Trees, or laid out in beautiful Gardens, which gave us a great Variety of pleasing Prospects. We were here shewn at a Distance the Desarts so famous by the Penance of *Mary Magdalen*, who after her Arrival with *Lazarus* and *Joseph of Arimathea* at *Marseillas*, is said to have wept away the rest of her Life among these solitary

Rocks and Mountains. We were becalmed for several Hours off this Place, which gave us an Opportunity of glutting our Eyes with Variety of fine Prospects; at last a gentle Breeze, and favourable to our Wishes, sprang up and continued fair till we got to *Genoa*, where we had a View of a great many beautiful Places standing along the Sea Shore on both Sides of the City, which makes the Town appear much longer than it is to those that sail by it. The Houses are most of them painted on the Out-side, so that they look extremely gay and lively. The new Street is a double Range of Palaces from one End to the other, and fit for the greatest Princes to inhabit.

AT *Genoa* we changed or rather gave away our *French* Chaises and got *Italian* ones, in which we set out for *Milan* on the 28th in the Morning, and by the Way stopped at *Pavia*, once the Metropolis of a Kingdom, but is at present a poor Town. It is the *Ticinum* of the Ancients which took its Name from the River *Ticinus*, now called the *Tecin*. The River falls into the *Po*, and is excessively rapid which does not agree with the Description of *Silius Italicus*; who represents it as so very gentle and still a River.

THERE is an University of seven Colleges in this Town, one of them is called the College of *Barromea* very large and neatly built. There is likewise a Statue in Brass of



Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 5

of *Marcus Antoninus* on Horseback, which the People of the Place call *Charles* the Fifth, and some learned Men *Constantine* the Great. Between *Pavia* and *Millan* we saw the Convent of *Carthusians*, which is very spacious and beautiful; their Church is extremely fine and curiously adorned, but of a *Gothick* Structure.

THO' *Arabella* had no great Pleasure in galloping about in Towns to see what was curious, yet in Complaisance she accompanied me in visiting the *Ambrosian Library* at *Milan*, the Closet or Collection of Count *Mezzabarba* and *Septala*. The Church of *St. Ambrose*. The Sepulchre of *Paganus de Petra Sancta*. The inverted Columns in the Church of *St. Laurence*. The ancient Portico. The Church of the *Servites*. The Place where the Cross was fixed by *St. Barnabas*; the Inscription of *Lewis XII.* and another of *Gaston de Foix*. The Head of *St. Apollonia Lufiniana*, the learned Maiden. The Library of *Sig. Belcraddio* of *Pavia*. The Reliëts of *St. Augustin*, supposed by some to have been found at *Pavia*.

IN the Church of *St. Laurence*, which was built by the Architect *Peregrino*, after a singular Manner; the Columns cleaving to Pillasters are inverted; so that the Capitals serve for Bases, and the Bases for Capitals: What could be the Design of that great Master in Architecture, is hard to conceive.

6 The TRAVELS of

THE ancient Colonnade opposite to the Church in the publick Street is a Diastylus of Sixteen fluted Columns of the Corinthian Order; where the Intercolumniations are three Diameters of a Pillar, which is very uncommon at Rome in the ancient Ruins. At the End of it is this noble Inscription on a Stone.

IMPERATORI CAESARI
L. AURELIO VERO
AUG. ARMENIACO
MEDICO PARTHICO
MAX. TRIB. POT. VII
IMP. III. COS. III. P. P.
DIVI ANTONINI PI
DIVI HADRIANI
NEPOTI DIVI
TRAJANI PAR
THICI PRONE
POTI DIVI NERVAE
ABNEPOTI
DEC DEC

THAT is, To the Emperor *Caesar Lucius Aurelius Verus Augustus*, Conqueror of *Armenia, Media, Parthia*, most mighty, Tribune seven Times, saluted Emperor four Times, Consul thrice, Father of his Country, Son to the Divine Antoninus, Grandson to the divine Adrian, Great Grandson to the divine Trajan, Conqueror of Parthia, Great great Grandson to the divine Nerva.

THE

THE great Church of *Milan* has two noble Pulpits of Brass, each of them running round a large Pillar like a Gallery, and supported by huge Figures of the same Mettal. The History of our Saviour and of the blessed Virgin is finely cut in Marble by *Andrew Biffy*. This Church is very rich in Relicks, which run up as high as *Daniel*, *Jonas*, and *Abraham*. Among the rest they shew a Fragment of the *English Becket*, as indeed there are very few Treasuries of Relicks in *Italy* that have not a Tooth or a Bone of this Saint. It would be endless to count up the Riches of Silver, Gold, and precious Stones, that are amassed together in this and several other Churches in *Milan*.

I was told that in *Milan* there are sixty Convents of Women, eighty of Men, and Two hundred Churches. This City is of a round Form, and encompassed by a Wall in which there are ten Gates, being about ten Miles in Circumference, too large to admit of a regular Fortification; but the Citadel, which is a large Hexagon, and commands the Place, is looked upon as one of the strongest Fortresses in *Italy*. The City and Suburbs are supposed to contain about Three hundred thousand Souls, among whom are great Numbers of Nobility and Gentry as well as Merchants.

THEIR

3 The TRAVELS of

THEIR principal Manufactures are those of Silk, Brocade, and other rich Stuffs: Their Steel and Iron Ware and fine Chrystal Works are also much admired. The Nobility here affect to make a grand Appearance, as is evident from their Cloaths, Coaches, and numerous Retinues of Servants, and the Women go abroad and enjoy more Freedom than in many other Towns of Italy.

HERE *Arabella* and I bought each of us a Sute of embroidered Velvet; and she looked so charming, that in all publick Places both Men and Women cried in Raptures, *é troppo bello per un Cavalero*, i. e. *he's too handsome for a Man*. One Morning as we were at Mass in *St. Ambrose Church*, one of those necessary Women called *Dueno's* came and planted herself close by my Friend, and had the Art of conveying into her Coat Pocket a Billet without being perceived.

ABOUT an Hour after, as we were taking the Air upon the Banks of the little River *Olano*, *Arabella* pulled out with her Handkerchief the Billet. Ho! cried I, upon seeing it on the Ground, my Life for it this Billet will lead you to some fair Conquest; let us see, continued I taking it up, what it contains, for I do not expect, my dearest, that you will keep your Amours a Secret from me. No, no, said she, read it with all my Heart;
upon

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 9

upon breaking it open, I found the following Words in *French*.

‘ I have heard so much of *French* Gal-
‘ lantry, and believe the Gentlemen of that
‘ Nation to be so well versed in all the
‘ Mysteries of it, that a Billet-doux, I sup-
‘ pose, will neither displease nor surprize
‘ you ; but I believe it will be otherwise
‘ when I tell you that I am not the Person
‘ who has a Plot upon your Heart, but the
‘ Friend of one who is in Birth, Fortune,
‘ Beauty, and many rare Accomplishments,
‘ far superior to any Woman in *Milan* ; but
‘ I must tell you, at the same Time, that
‘ her Virtue is equal to her other Perfec-
‘ tions ; so that no other Pretensions but
‘ what are strictly honourable will be listened
‘ to, and, even in that Case, if your Birth
‘ is not answerable to the Appearance you
‘ make, it will be in vain to conceive any
‘ Hopes of Success : These are the Con-
‘ ditions, and it is your Business to consider
‘ whether you are capable to perform them.
‘ You know all Strangers of Distinction may
‘ present themselves at the *Vicar General’s*
‘ Palace, and be admitted into the Assem-
‘ blies, observing a few Formalities.

‘ If you have Ambition, or but the least
‘ Degree of Curiosity, for which your Na-
‘ tion is so remarkable, you will, no doubt,
‘ make it your Business to be there To-
‘ morrow Night. A Lady will drop her
‘ Hand-

10 *The* TRAVELS of

‘ Handkerchief as she passes by you, which
‘ you are to take up, and dexterously wrap
‘ it about your Answer if you are intitled
‘ to write one.’

ADIEU.

I told you what would happen, my dear *Arabella*, said I laughing, this must be some Princess; I believe in my Conscience you will make all the *Italian* Ladies mad. Well, after all is said and done this is tip-top; but what Answer will you make? Why, none at all; to what Purpose should I embark myself in an Intrigue for which you know I am so little qualified? Come, come, my dear said I, none of your grave Remarks; what came we abroad for, but to divert ourselves with the Follies of the World. I must see this mighty modest tender *Diana*, and you must try whether she is as virtuous as her Friend would make us believe; thou art a mad Girl *Althea*, and I am silly enough to go into all thy Whims: Well, by way of Punishment, or, rather, because you are better versed than I in the amorous Stile, you shall write the Answer; with all my Heart, cried I, and I shall make her sensible that we *French* Folks know how to manage your *Milan Lucretia*’s.

THE Banker, to whom we had Letters of Recommendation and Credit from *Marseilles* for what Money we had Occasion, being a Man of Consequence, and courted by all the Nobility,

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. II

Nobility, propose, of his own Accord, to introduce us at the Assembly, and promised to come to our Inn in order to go along with us.

THIS Point being settled, the next thing was to prepare the Letter, which was to be my Task, and it was the first Thing I did after we returned to our Lodgings, though it was only to be delivered the next Night. My dear *Alithea*, said *Arabella*, I am not so fond of this Whim as you seem to be: The *Italians* you know are of a very revengeful Disposition, and a Disappointment in an Intrigue is, I have been told, an unpardonable Crime among them; besides, how do we know but this is the Contrivance of some *Curtezan*, those Creatures have strange Schemes, and as they all have their *Bravo's* I confess that it frightens me to think of what may happen.

NEVER fear, Child, I will always be by you, and if I am not good at fighting, I can hector and bully with the best of them. Well, well, cried she, I see it is in vain to dispute with you, write the Letter in what Terms you think proper, and I will deliver it to the Fair Unknown.

‘ If any thing in my Person has procured me the Happiness of being taken Notice of by a Lady of Quality, Merit and Beauty, I shall become vain of personal Accomplishments, which hitherto I never thought
‘ I

‘ I had ; but till that Lady is pleased to dis-
 ‘ cover herself I cannot answer any Part of
 ‘ her Friend’s Letter, not being *Don Quixot*
 ‘ enough to fall in Love with a Fantom,
 ‘ and, which is more, I love Liberty and a
 ‘ rambling Life so dearly, that she must have
 ‘ more than ordinary Charms to fix my ro-
 ‘ ving Disposition ; however, I cannot say
 ‘ how far such Accomplishments as her’s
 ‘ may alter my present Way of thinking,
 ‘ and therefore I will not promise but that I
 ‘ may love her ; but this I can positively
 ‘ promise, that I never will propose any
 ‘ thing but what a Woman of the strictest
 ‘ Virtue may listen to, and by my Sincerity
 ‘ I hope to gain her Esteem, if it happens
 ‘ that my Pretensions to any higher Happi-
 ‘ ness ought to be restrained.

OUR Banker invited us next Day to Din-
 ner, where we were very elegantly enter-
 tained in the *French* Way ; he had two
 Daughters pretty Girls enough, and during
 Dinner I could observe that both the young
 Ladies threw Glances at my Friend very dif-
 ferent from what they honoured me with,
 or, to speak more candidly, their Eyes were
 for ever fixed on the lovely *Arabella*, and, to
 my Honour be it spoken, I was so far from
 being jealous, that I inwardly applauded their
 good Taste, and my Friend’s Conquests did
 me more Pleasure than if I had made them
 myself. We had a secret imperceptible Way
 of communicating our Thoughts to one ano-
 ther,

ther, which was by certain Signs that we had agreed upon ; in this silent Dialect I made *Arabella* understand my Conjectures. We remained at the Banker's till the Hour of the Assembly, and I could observe a visible Concern in the Looks of both the Sisters when we left the House.

As we were going down Stairs, I whispered in her Ear if you go on at this Rate you'll have Work enough upon your Hands ; but it is cruel in you, my dear, to inhance the whole Trade, and not allow me so much as one poor Conquest ; she smiled, but had not Time to say any thing, the Banker being then too near us.

We were no sooner got thorough the Ceremonial of Introduction than a Lady, not very young, but of a very genteel Air and well dressed, came close to *Arabella*, and dropt her Handkerchief at her Feet, which she immediately took up, and put the Letter so dexterously in it, that I could not perceive she had done it.

UPON receiving it the Lady made a very gracious Curtesey, and thanked her ; the *Chevalier de Montferan*, for I think I should no longer feminize him, made a profound Bow, and told her very gallantly that he hoped this would not be the last Opportunity of this kind she would give him. The Lady smiled and walked towards the other End of the Hall, where, no doubt, she

took an Opportunity to look if there was any thing in her Handkerchief, but the Crowd prevented my observing her Actions.

THE Assembly was very numerous, both Men and Women magnificently dressed, and every thing conducted with a little too much Formality and Decorum, but very agreeable to the *Italian* Genius.

THE *Chevalier de Montferan* attracted the whole Eyes of the Assembly, and I dare be bold to say made many poor Hearts to ake that Night. As neither of us could talk *Italian* easily all those with whom we had Occasion to converse spoke *French*. Several of the Senators invited us to their Houses, and particularly one of the *Doria* Family with whom I plaid at Piquet, who insisted on my Friend and my dining with him next Day.

I would not delay till then, said he, the Pleasure of having your Company at my House, but that I am engaged to sup abroad; to morrow at one o' Clock I hope to see your Friend and you, and I will come and be your Conductor my self.

As we were driving to our Inn from the Assembly in a Coach which we hired by the Day, I told *Arabella* that I was very certain she would have at least a Dozen of Billet-doux next Morning; for I had observed that the greatest Part of the Ladies in the Assembly

bly Room were so struck with her Charms that they could not help looking at her with very wishful Eyes.

My dear *Alithea*, said she, taking me in her Arms, you are the most comical waggish Girl that I ever knew; but though the Case were as you represent it, do you think that I will be plagued and teized with such Nonsense: No, no, I insist upon our leaving this amorous Place. With all my Heart, said I; but let us first break a few Hearts more, which made her laugh in spite of the serious Air she had put on,

AFTER Supper we had a very serious Conversation upon the Difference of *French* and *Italian* Gallantries. Though our Women, said *Arabella*, are as subject to Passions as any others, and perhaps more, I have seldom heard of their writing Billet-doux to Men that they never conversed with; and I think it a Piece of Impudence unbecoming the Modesty of the Sex, and were I a Man I should have but a very indifferent Opinion of a Woman who would make the first Advances.

I am not at all surprized, replied I, that you and I should think so, Education and the Customs of *France* are against such Liberties, and consequently it would be wrong in us to use them; but the Case is otherwise in this Country, and I believe your Unknown Fair, being authorized by the common Practice of *Italy*, thinks there's

no Harm in making her Friend write you a Letter, and may be a very virtuous Woman notwithstanding ; for, my dear, continued I, are there not Liberties used by the Women in *France* which we think very innocent, and yet they are terribly criticized by the Inhabitants of the Northern Climates. Very true, said she, but I must own that I condemn some of our *French* Freedoms, and could wish they were reformed, and not to conceal from you any Part of my impolite Way of thinking. I take it not to be altogether so decent in you and me to be exposing our Thighs and Legs to publick View though we pass for Men.

'Tis true, my dear *Arabella*, said I laughing, that such a Face and Legs as yours are very dangerous for both Sexes in this Country, for I believe you are not ignorant of that abominable Gouge to which the *Italian* Men are, I am told, addicted ; and I am very much mistaken if the old Senator who has invited us to Dinner be not one of those unnatural Brutes. Could I believe it, cried *Arabella*, I would rather see him hanged than go to his House. ---- Let us send our Excuse To-morrow Morning, for I positively will not go near him. We shall lose a very fine Dinner, said I, but I would not feast with the Gods if my *Arabella* did not like their Company.

NEXT Morning as we were at Breakfast *Arabella's* Maid, dressed in Mens Cloaths as mine was, brought her Mistress a Letter, which

which a Black in Livery had just then given her, and went off the Moment, telling her that it required no Answer; it was directed to the *Chevalier de Montferan* at the Golden Lyon Inn in *Milan*, and contained what follows.



SIR,
 ONE would almost swear you had been taught to play at Cups and Balls, so dexterously you juggled your Billet into the Handkerchief, which even I myself, who was all Eyes at that Moment, could not perceive. I should have expected that you would have been, or, at least, protested that you was languishing and dying for a Sight of the fair *Incognita*; but instead of that you tell her in a very plain easy Manner that nothing but superior Charms can make you part with your dear Liberty; for my Part, I see nothing of that Liveliness or Gallantry in your Letter, which might be expected from a *Frenchman*, and yet my Friend is so pleased with your dull Sincerity, that she would willingly have an Interview with you; but as Age has given me some Experience, I know better things than to suffer her to take such a Step, till some Preliminaries are first settled, and if you cannot subscribe to them in God's Name

B 3

pursue

‘ pursue your Travels, and make much of
 ‘ your sweet Liberty. Now to the Prelimi-
 ‘ naries to which I expect a categorical
 ‘ Answer To-morrow Morning, which the
 ‘ Bearer of this will call for.

‘ In the first place, supposing that at first
 ‘ Sight you should fall desperately in Love
 ‘ with my Friend (who is but Sixteen, and
 ‘ cannot marry till she enters her 22d Year)
 ‘ can you undertake to be her humble Slave
 ‘ for five Years, to be governed during that
 ‘ Time by my Directions, and to conceal
 ‘ the Affair like Murder, till you have
 ‘ my Allowance for declaring yourself her
 ‘ Lover.

‘ 2dly, Can you give authentick Proofs of
 ‘ your being a Gentleman; as for your For-
 ‘ tune we are very indifferent whether it be
 ‘ considerable or not.

‘ 3dly, Will you undertake never to
 ‘ speak to my Friend, or even to look at
 ‘ her with a Lover’s Eyes in any Assembly
 ‘ or publick Place where she and you may
 ‘ happen to meet, particularly in the Church
 ‘ where you must be sure to take no Notice
 ‘ of her at all.

‘ 4thly, During the Time of your Novi-
 ‘ ciat, or rather your Purgatory, will you pro-
 ‘ mise to go to Mass and Vispers every Day
 ‘ (not forgetting your Beeds) give now and
 ‘ then little Presents to the Monks and
 ‘ Friars,

‘ Friars, be extremely civil and courteous
 ‘ to the Clergy, and have often Masses
 ‘ said for the Souls of your Ancestors, for
 ‘ which you are to pay very liberally. And

‘ Lastly, Be so sober, discreet, pious, and
 ‘ prudent, that your exemplary Life may,
 ‘ at length, become the common Topick of
 ‘ Discourse, and every Mother may men-
 ‘ tion you as a Pattern for her Son’s Imita-
 ‘ tion.

‘ THIS, Sir, is the only Road, though
 ‘ indeed sometimes rough, that can lead you
 ‘ to the Possession of the most lovely Wo-
 ‘ man that Nature ever framed, and well
 ‘ worth the undergoing a more severe Drud-
 ‘ gery, if you knew but what a Treasure
 ‘ your Constancy and good Behaviour may at
 ‘ last entitle you to, but which you can ne-
 ‘ ver possess without a strict and punctual
 ‘ Performance of every Article of the Trea-
 ‘ ty; so lay your Hand to your Heart, con-
 ‘ sult with your Pillow, say your Prayers,
 ‘ and let me know how you stand affected;
 ‘ if you dare go through the fiery Trial,
 ‘ you shall have proper Directions from
 ‘ Time to Time, but, if otherwise,
 ‘ Farewel, good Sir, till we meet in Hea-
 ‘ ven.’

I thought *Arabella* would have killed
 herself with laughing at this whimsical
 Scheme; and when her Fit was a little
 abated,

abated she asked me what I thought of the Treaty : Why, I think, said I laughing, that these Ladies have a Mind to make a Saint of you ; for so many pious Works, and such an exemplary Life to be led for five Years, must surely raise you to the highest Pinacle of Virtue and Piety, and I think this Lady proposes a very effectual Way of preventing her Friend's being married to a Rake. Very well, said she, but, though she were the finest Woman in the World, do you think she will ever meet with a Man of Honour that will throw himself into such a Gulf of Dissimulation and Hypocrisy to obtain her ? You know, my dear, replied I, that Custom is a second Nature ; and though a Man at first may have no Goust for such a Scheme of Life, it is with Piety as with Vice, the more we practise either, the better they go down with us, and consequently from being a very loose Liver, the affected Habit of Regularity may bring a Man at last to a very different Disposition, and to perform, with Pleasure, Duties which before were insipid and tiresome. All this may be true for ought I know, answered *Arabella* ; but though I were a Man, I believe I should scarce be persuaded to take such a rough Road to Virtue, and I will give this Lady my Advice to bate something of her Preliminaries in the next Treaty she has Occasion to make ; in the mean time while I am in the Humour, let her know that her Terms are too hard for me ; upon which she took Pen and Ink and wrote what follows.

MADAM,



MADAM,

‘ **T**O bind one’s self to the Performance
 ‘ of your Preliminaries would be go-
 ‘ ing throw a fiery Trial worse, if worse can
 ‘ be, than Purgatory ; and though I doubt
 ‘ not but that the Charms of your Friend
 ‘ would inspire some Men of very amorous
 ‘ Dispositions, with a Courage equal to the
 ‘ mighty Work, yet I must very sincerely
 ‘ own that my Heart is not capable of Im-
 ‘ pressions sufficient to support my Con-
 ‘ stancy during a five Years Penance ; and,
 ‘ therefore, while I enjoy my darling Li-
 ‘ berty, I think it is better to keep out of
 ‘ Temptation’s Way than by losing it (which
 ‘ a Sight of your Friend’s miraculous Beauty
 ‘ might bring about) to promise what I could
 ‘ not perform ; so all Things duly considered
 ‘ I must keep my Heart to myself, till some
 ‘ good-natured Fair thinks fit to accept of it
 ‘ upon easier Conditions ; and I hope when
 ‘ we meet in the other World you’ll tell me,
 ‘ if your Friend found in this a Lover such
 ‘ as you wanted me to be, and who am too
 ‘ fond of a roving Life to make myself mi-
 ‘ serable long before, and, perhaps, ever
 ‘ after, the fatal Knot is tied ; I have the
 ‘ Honour, however, to assure your Friend
 ‘ and you of my Gratitude and Respect, and
 ‘ that

‘ that you may always reckon me capable of
 ‘ Sentiments of Friendship, though not of
 ‘ Love *a la made de Milan*, from which good
 ‘ Lord deliver,

MADAM,

Your, &c.

SHE had scarce finished this Letter when Word was brought that an elderly Woman wanted to speak with her in private. Another *Billex-doux*, I hope, said I; come and give a private Audience to this *She Mercury*; if it be as you guess, answered my Friend, I'll stay no longer in this mad Town.

SHE returned in a Moment with a Paper in her Hand, and told me, angrily, that she believed all the Women in *Milan* were mere Coquets. Look, my dear, said she, throwing down the Paper on the Table, what fine Things are said, and in *French* too, for fear I should not understand them. I took up the Paper, and here is what it contained.



‘ IF the Possession of a charming Woman
 ‘ be a Happiness to which you aspire, it
 ‘ may be acquired without much Trouble
 ‘ or Expence; all that will be required of
 ‘ you

‘ you is a little more Discretion and Con-
 ‘ stancy, than your Countrymen generally
 ‘ have ; and that you will believe yourself
 ‘ to be the only Man upon Earth, who has
 ‘ found the Secret of touching my Mistress’s
 ‘ Heart ; this I tell you by her Order, and
 ‘ that by posting yourself at the holy Water-
 ‘ pot of *St. Ambrose Church* To-morrow pre-
 ‘ cisely at Eleven, you will see a Lady,
 ‘ who in passing will ask you if Mass be be-
 ‘ gun : View her well, and tell the Bearer,
 ‘ who will be attending there, whether you
 ‘ will take a Trip with her to the *Island of*
 ‘ *Love*. I can tell you for your Encourage-
 ‘ ment, that she adds to personal Charms
 ‘ the Advantage of a sweet natural Temper,
 ‘ a solid Judgment and sprightly Wit ; and
 ‘ if you can resist all that, you are more, or
 ‘ rather, I think, less than Man ; however,
 ‘ though we love you, nothing against your
 ‘ Stomach. good Signior, for forced Prayers
 ‘ are no Devotion, and we must have your
 ‘ Heart or nothing.

Adio Signor Francesse.

WHEN I had read this Billet-doux she
 asked my Opinion of it ? It does not at all
 surprize me, answered I, and I believe be-
 fore the Day is at an End we shall have a
 Dozen more of the same Kind, for I can tell
 you that you made terrible Hovock at the
 Assembly, and I cannot in Conscience blame
 the poor Women, for, my dear *Arabella*,

* A Place where Lovers meet near *Milan*.

your

your Charms are irresistible. Since you think so, said she very seriously, I must prevent farther Mischief, by positively insisting upon our leaving this Place to morrow Morning ; to which I consented, tho' I could have wished to have staid a few Days longer, and had a little more Diversion with the *Milan* Ladies ; but my Compliance was upon Condition that she and I should go to *St. Ambrose* Church at the Hour appointed, to see if the Lady answered to the Maid's Description ; accordingly thither we went, and saw a very pretty Woman, and after we had fully satisfied our Curiosity we went to the Gate that leads to *Brescia*, to which Place, we travelled through a very pleasant Country, and by the Way, crossed the River *Adda* that falls into the *Lago di Como*: A small Days Journey brought us from *Brescia* to *Verona* ; in our Way we saw the Lake *Benacus*, which the *Italians* now call *Lago di Garda*. This Lake described by *Virgil* perfectly, resembles a Sea, when it is worked up by Storms. It is thirty five Miles in Length and twelve in Breadth. At the lower End of it we crossed the *Mincio*.

AT *Verona* we saw the famous *Amphitheatre*, that with a few modern Reparations has all the Seats intire. There is something very noble in it, though the high Wall and Corridors that went round it are almost intirely ruined, and the *Area* is quite filled up to the lower Seat, which was formerly deep enough to let the Spectators see in Safety, the

the Combats of the wild Beasts and Gladiators.

THERE are some other Antiquities in *Verona*, of which, the Principal is the Ruine of a triumphal Arch erected to *Flaminius*, where we see old *Doric* Pillars, without any Pedestal or Basis as *Vitruvius* has described them.

FROM *Verona* to *Padua*, we travelled through a very pleasant Country : It is planted with thick Rows of white Mulberry-Trees that furnish Food for great Quantities of Silk Worms with their Leaves, as the Swine and Poultry consume the Fruit. The Trees themselves serve, at the same Time, as so many Stays for their Vines, which hang all along like Garlands from Tree to Tree. Between the several Ranges lye Fields of Corn, which in these warm Countries, ripens much better among the Mulberry Shades, than if it were exposed to the open Sun. We lay at *Vicenza*, and next Day arrived at *Padua* the second Town to the *Venitian* State, though once the first, but Tyranny, and too frequent Murders, have very much depopulated it. It stands in the *Marca Trevigiana*. The Walls about it are strong, and backed with fine Ramparts. It lies near the *Eugenian* Hills, in a fertile Soil and Plain, which makes the Proverb say, *Bologna la grassa, ma Padua la passa*.

WE see here the Tomb of *St. Anthony*, and what is more Curious, his Sermon to the Fishes, who, as the Story goes, bowed down their Heads with all the Marks of a profound Humility and Devotion, moving their Bodies up and down with a kind of Fondness, as approving what had been spoken by the blessed Father *St. Antonio*. The Legend adds, that after many Hereticks, who were present at the Miracle, had been converted by it, the Saint gave his Benediction to the Fish and dismissed them.

THE Church of *St. Justina* is one of the finest Churches of *Italy*; and no Wonder, since its Architect was *Palladio*. Under the high Altar lies buried the Body of *St. Justina*. The fine *Cupolas*, the curious Pavement of red and black Marble; the rich high Altar all of *Pietre Comesse*; the Seats in the Choir, with the Histories of the old and new Testament cut in Wood in them; the fine Picture at the End of the Choir over the Abbot's Seat, containing the Martyrdom of *St. Justina*, by the Hand of *Paolo Veronese*; the Tomb of *St. Luke* the Evangelist, and that of *St. Mathias*; the Well full of Relicks, and the Tomb of *St. Prosdocimus*, *St. Peter's* Disciple, and first Bishop of *Padua*, do all make this Church very considerable.

THE Palace of the *Capitano Grande* is large and magnificent, and in it stands the Library.

THE great Hall called here *il palagio de ragione* is 180 Paces long, and 40 broad without Pillars. It hath four great Doors, and over each of them the Statue of a learned *Paduan*. In the Roof of this Hall are astronomical Figures, representing the Influence of the superior Bodies over the inferior. At one End of it you see a round Stone, with these Words written about it,

Lapis opprobrii, the Stone of Disgrace.

Upon which whosoever will sit publicly, and declare himself not to be *soluendo*, cannot be elapt in Prison for Debt. At the other End stands *Livy's* Head, in white Marble; and out of a little Back-door stands his Busto in Stone, with this Epitaph under it in old *Gothick* Letters:

Ossa Titi Livii Patavini unius omnium mortalium judicio digni cujus prope invicto ealame invicti Populi Romani res gestæ conscriberentur. Which runs in the Italian Translation thus, rendered *verbatim*: Here lyes the Remains of Titus Livius of Padua, the only Person whom all Mankind revered, and who wrote with irresistible Evidence the History of the invincible Romans.

FROM *Padua* we went down to the River *Brent*, which brought us in a Days Time to *Venice*. To see one of the finest Towns of the Universe rising out of the Waters, its magnificent Palaces and lofty Towers appearing in full View, on which Side soever you approach ; no Trees or even Walls to interrupt the Sight, but the Houses on the Outside of the Town washed with the Flood at least four Feet deep, affords a most delightful and amazing Prospect.

THE first Thing we did after being fixed in good Lodgings near to the Piazza of *St. Mark*, was, to send for one of those Virtuoso Abbés, who are well versed in the Gallantries, as well as Curiosities of the Place, and are very ready to serve Strangers, from whom they expect to be genteelly rewarded, in both Capacities. They are almost as numerous as the *Gondolas*, and in a Moment a dapper little Fellow with a Band and short Cloak was with us, who spoke *French* and *English* perfectly well, which qualifies them for the Trade they follow.

THE first Thing he asked was, how long we intended to contract with our Wives, at what Price *per* Week or Month, and to give him Directions about their Age, Complexions, and Shapes? *Arabella* stared him in the Face, and I laughed very heartily. You seem, Gentlemen, said he, to be surprized at my Proposal, which proceeds, I suppose

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. . 29

suppose, from your being unacquainted with the Customs of this City. There is no Gentleman Traveller of Note who does not provide himself in a Wife the Moment he arrives in Town ; and without he can afford to go to this necessary Expence and keep his *Gondola* Men in Livery, he cannot pretend to be received into polite Company. By your Appearance you seem to be Gentlemen of Distinction, and I should be sorry to see you deviate from the common Practice, since I cannot imagine that you scruple the Expence. No, said I, but we have no Plot of keeping Mistresses, and far less of contracting Marriages.

My God, cried he, can you do without a Bed-fellow at your Age ; it is impossible ! And your seeming Indifference must proceed from a mean Opinion of my Capacity in procuring you handsome genteel Wives ; but, Sir, let me tell you, that all the tip-top *Cartezans* in Town make their Court to me for my Recommendation, because I generally furnish them more and better Chaps than any of my Profession ; and to put the Thing out of all doubt you shall have your Choice of a Hundred that I have in my List ; and I am sure if I don't fit you, none else in Town can.

WE are in no Hurry about Wives or Mistresses, said *Arabella*, who had been silent all along, of your chusing, for I do not think our Stay at *Venice* will be above eight or ten

Days, and it would require more Time than that to review all your Seraglio ; but as it may be a Loss to you (for I suppose you share in the matrimonial Fee) that we do not follow the common Practice, if you will honestly tell my Friend and me what Profit you have from every such Marriage which you negotiate, we will satisfy you for that Article as well as for shewing us the Curiosities of the Place, upon this Condition that you will endeavour to get us introduced to the Assemblies, and let us into the secret Intrigues both in Gallantry and Politicks of this famous Republic.

As for the former, said he, the Thing is easy, and I believe you'll scarce meet with many Man in Town who can satisfy your Curiosity better than I, it being a Branch of my Business to pry into all the Amours ; but as for the latter, as I have no Mind to get myself hanged, which might, without a Miracle, be the Consequence of dipping into State Affairs, you must have me excused from meddling with the Government directly or undirectly any farther than what our Senate thinks proper to let the Publick know. Well, well, cried *Arabella*, we have no Plot upon your Life, only for the first Service, we expect you will get us properly introduced to some of your *Nobles*, that we may have an Opportunity of conversing with the better Sort, and this is more agreeable at least to me than seeing Churches and fine Houses ; as for my Friend added

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 31

ded she smiling, I believe you must gallop a little to satisfy his Curiosity. Since I now know what is to be my Task, said he, I will endeavour to please you both, and if you think fit I will get you presented to Morrow Night at the Palace of *Morofini*, where there is to be an Assembly. That will do very well, said I; but *Signor Abbaté*, as I am not quite so averse to Matrimony as my Friend, I should be glad to see some of the best Sort of your Monthly marrying Ladies, and I don't know but I may try one of them for a Week; but first of all a Gondolo must be hired, and we must beg the Favour of you to manage that Affair for us: I will with Pleasure, said he, do that, and I have in view a certain *Padroné* who knows all the gallantish Ladies Maids, and is well provided with all the necessary Materials for an Intrigue. What do you mean by Intrigue Materials, cried *Ara-bella*? I mean, Sir, Poniards, Pocket-pistols, and Silken Ladders to go up to a Lady's Window upon a proper Signal from her Confident. These are necessary Implements, said she; and though we may, perhaps, have but little Use for scaling Ladders, it is necessary to know where we can be furnished upon Occasion. For my Part, said I, I do not much incline to be concerned in Intrigues that are to be carried on with so much Precaution and Secrecy, and attended with so much Danger, and would much rather chuse to move in a lower Sphere of Gallantry. I can fit you too, cried our honest Abbé, and if you'll go with me to Mass to the

32 *The* TRAVELS of

the Church of the Convent of *La Pietà*, you will hear the best Musick of *Venice* performed by the Nuns, who have pretty Women among them and are not inaccessible to a Man who joins Liberality to other Accomplishments ; even *Apollonia* herself, who is the finest Singer in *Italy*, with the Advantage of a pretty Face and genteel Person, can be purchased at the Expence of a Hundred Ducats ; but if you think it Sacrilege to approach those consecrated Females, as this Church is the Rendezvous of all the Coquets in *Venice*, you may pick and chuse ; all you have to do is to present the Lady, whom you think fit for you, with holy Water as she goes out, and leave the rest to me.

I cannot hinder myself from thinking, said I to *Arabella* laughing, but that we are fallen into very good Hands ; to be sure such a Man as you *Signor Abbaté*, continued I, addressing myself to him, must be a very useful Member of the Commonwealth, but are not venereal Distempers very common in *Venice* ; and must not a Man be very much exposed who roves from Fair to Fair ? By no Means, answered he ; for even the lowest Class of our *Curtezans* are honest enough to tell a Man when they are not in a Condition to admit him to their Embraces ; and if his Passion be so strong that, notwithstanding this Declaration, he persists in gratifying it, he must blame himself not the Woman, who fairly told him the Danger ; and if this be
the

the Case with the Dregs, if I may use the Term, of the Sex, what may be expected from Women of Character; besides, Gentlemen, I have too great a Regard for my own Reputation, which hitherto has been unquestionable, to give you any Thing but what is good and sound.

WAS there ever Man, said I to *Arabella*, that better deserved the Title of *illustrissimo procuratore*? and what a monstrous Defect is it in our Language, that we have no other Term for a Man of his Business but a most *illustrious Pimp*. If he performs what he undertakes, said my Friend, I believe he is one of the best of his Trade, but I think we have said enough upon this, and I could wish he would now go and see to provide us in a *Gondola* that we may take the Air. That shall be soon done, Gentlemen, said he, and you shall have one that will do Honour to its Masters.

THE great Diversion of *Venice* in the Time of Carnival as well as on all other solemn Occasions, is Masking, which gives Occasion to abundance of Love Adventures, and a secret History of a Carnival, would, I dare say, be highly diverting. Their Comedies run for ever in the same Channel, a pedantick *Doctor*, a blundering *Harlequin*, an old *Cully*, and a *Sharper*. But what is worse in their Comedies, the Poets, when they have a Mind to make the Audience merry, fall into the most filthy double Meanings

ings imaginable, and when the fine Gentleman talks to his Mistress, his Pedantry would make you sick. In short, there is nothing tolerable in any one of the Parts, if we accept *Harlequin*, who has something so comical in the Voice and Gestures, that tho' one is very sensible of the Folly of the Part, yet he can hardly forbear being pleased with it.

THERE is no Place in the World, where, to outward Appearance, there is so much Reservedness and Caution in Behaviour as at *Venice*. The Senators, and all the noble *Venetians* in general, are the best Professors and the worst Practisers of Religion in the Universe. The two predominant Passions reigning here, are Love and Revenge, and yet both are so secretly and so discreetly managed, that in this large City fewer Adventures of either Kinds come to the Knowledge of the Public than in any other Place or Country that I know.

OF late Years the Ladies have thrown off a good Deal of the slavish Restraint which formerly their Parents and Husbands kept them under, and they are now become visible in publick Places, such as Churches, Assemblies, Plays, and upon the Canals in their *Gondolas*.

THE first Day, we made our Appearance both richly dressed, I could immediately perceive in the Looks of all whom we met
Men

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 35

Men and Women, that *Arabella's* Charms would produce the same Effect here as in other Places, and that I must prepare my writing Materials to answer the *Billet-doux*.

WE happened to meet a Gondola as we were going up the grand Canal, which, by its Magnificence, and the Beauty of a young Lady that was in it, gave us an Opportunity of asking our *Abbé* if he knew to whom it belonged, and the Name of the fine Lady who was in it. That Lady, answered he, is Mistress to one of the *Procuratori de San Marco*, who happening to fall in Love with her, and her Parents being poor, he purchased her for a thousand Ducats. What, cried *Arabella*, do People sell their Daughters here, yes Sir said he, the Ladies are so indulgent to their Sons, that as soon as they observe in any of them an Inclination for the fair Sex, they bargain with some of their poor Neighbours for one of their Daughters to be his Bed-fellow, whereby they prevent his Marrying to Disadvantage. The Friends and Relations of the Girl who is to be the young Gentleman's Mistress come frequently to wish her Joy upon the Occasion, as if she was really married to him. They contract for a Month, a Year, or more, as they can agree. This Commerce is taken to be so little criminal here, that they scarce ever mention it in Confession; and if they do, the Priest tells them he will not be troubled with such Trifles. He added, that those who cannot afford to keep a Miss for their

36 *The* TRAVELS of

their particular Use, join with two or three Friends, and have one in common amongst them.

THAT Day, and a Part of the next, *Arabella* was so complaisant as to accompany me in visiting the principal Curiosities of this floating City, such as the Church and Treasury of *St. Mark*, the famous white marble Bridge called the *Realto*, which is one of the finest in *Europe* of one Arch; the *Doge's* Palace, the *Campanile*, or high Steeple, from whence we had a very fine View of the whole City, the Arsenal and several Churches, all which have been so fully described by so many Travellers that I shall only barely mention them.

IN the Evening we went to *Morosini's* Palace, where we were well received as *French* Gentlemen of Distinction; every thing passed with so much Gravity and Ceremony that we were soon tired, and retired betimes to our Lodgings.

NEXT Morning our Abbé came in jumping for Joy, and told my Friend that his Merit had already made a great Progress; and I have here, shewing three Letters, wherewithal to make good what I advance, you may have, said he, in a little Time the finest Seraglio that *Venice* can afford; and if your Conquests continue to go on in this Rapidity, you'll want your Friend's Assistance. As I knew *Arabella's* Indifference
• about

about such Epistles, I desired the Abbé with her Leave to give me them ; with all my Heart, said he, if your Friend consents. Give, give, cried she, I am very easy about them. As there are no Names subscribed, I put Marks with a Lead Pen, that I might know which was which : And first, Sir, let me present you with a darted Heart, as a proper Emblem of the Lady's who wrote it, and who should it be, think you, but the very Person whom you saw in the *Gondola*, and whose Heart was pierced with one single Glance from your Friend. The next marked with a Star has Eyes brighter than all the Planets ; she is the Wife of an old Senator who fancies she loves no body but himself, but your Friend may know the contrary if he pleases. And the Third is from the Mother of a beautiful young Creature, who wants to dispose of her Daughter for Five hundred *Sequins*. Now, Sir, if you please you may read them.

I first opened the Letter marked with the Heart, which contained these few Words.



‘ **W**HAT unlucky Chance threw you
 ‘ in my Way to render me miser-
 ‘ able ! You have seen my Person, and the
 ‘ Bearer who is a Man of known Discretion,
 ‘ will tell you my Story ; if the former
 Vol. III. D pleases,

38 *The TRAVELS of*

‘pleases, the latter will let you know, that
 ‘though I am in the Arms of another I
 ‘have a Heart to bestow, or, rather, you
 ‘have robbed me of it in a Moment. It
 ‘depends upon you to be as happy as I can
 ‘make you.’



Now to the STAR.

‘**M**Y Eyes tell me you are lovely, and
 ‘I wish yours may view me in as
 ‘favourable a Light. If the Attraction
 ‘proves reciprocal, what a Scene of Happi-
 ‘ness do I imagine to myself in the Inti-
 ‘macies of Love. The Bearer is a Man of
 ‘Ability, and faithful in the Discharge of
 ‘his Employment. You may see me at
 ‘Mafs every Morning at *St. Salvatore* about
 ‘Ten o’ Clock; and if seeing and loving
 ‘be the Case with you I do not know what
 ‘may happen.’



The third LETTER.

‘**S**TRAITNED Circumstances force me
 ‘to comply with an abominable Cus-
 ‘tom, which Mothers may, without Impu-
 ‘nity,

‘ nity, and even without being reflected up-
 ‘ on, practise in this wicked Town. I must
 ‘ acknowledge that the Victim’s Tears,
 ‘ whom I am forced to sacrifice, are Dag-
 ‘ gers to my Heart, and that nothing but
 ‘ meer Necessity could tempt me to make
 ‘ Use of so cruel an Expedient ; but I must
 ‘ lose one to save six, and this unhappy one
 ‘ has Charms, I believe, to tempt a Man of
 ‘ Fortune to come up to her Price. The
 ‘ Bearer is a Procurer to his Trade, and I be-
 ‘ lieve well qualified ; he will conduct you
 ‘ where you may have an Opportunity of
 ‘ seeing and conversing with what you are
 ‘ to purchase.

I could scarce keep in my Tears on read-
 ing this melancholly Letter, and *Arabella*
 was so moved that she was forced to go haf-
 tily into a Closet to prevent the Abbé’s tak-
 ing Notice of her Tears, which she could
 no longer restrain. I told him that I was
 afraid my Friend’s sudden Retreat proceeded
 from some Indisposition, and that he might
 dispose of himself as he thought proper for
 an Hour or two, and then return ; so off he
 went, and I ran into the Closet, where I
 found my dear *Arabella* bathed in Tears.

O ! *Alithea* ! said she taking hold of my
 Hand, what a terrible Letter was the last you
 read, and how the Case of the Mother and
 Daughter affect me ! which the Tears that
 drop from my Eyes will better explain than
 D 2 Words ;

Words ; do you know, continued she, what I am projecting with respect to these unhappy Women, the poor distressed Mother must be relieved, without sacrificing the innocent Daughter, and I am resolved to give her the Sum which she may expect from a Man ; but I would gladly have the Daughter married, or put into a Convent, to prevent any more Temptations of this Kind. I heartily agree to your generous Intentions, said I, but upon this Condition that I shall be a Partner in this laudable Action ; that is, furnish one Half of what we think necessary to relieve that distressed Family's present Wants, and provide the Daughter in a Husband, or place her in a Convent, if she prefers a religious to a married State. *Arabella* got me in her Arms, and, with Tears trickling down her Cheeks, cried how happy am I, to have a Friend whose Sentiments so perfectly correspond with mine. I thought it was impossible I could love you more than I did ; but this Instance of your Virtue and Generosity has added a new Link to my Heart ; and mine would certainly break, said I weeping in my Turn, were I to lose the Friendship of my dearest *Arabella*, or that she could think I would not chearfully contribute to prevent an unhappy Woman from prostituting her Child : As no Time is to be lost let us go to this desolate House the Moment the Abbé returns, who at last came in, and seemed to be in Raptures when we proposed going. If you both love that Girl, said the wicked Profligate, and can think of being Partners, she

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 41

she may serve you both, which will save Money.

IN short, we went to the Place, and little did our Conductor dream with what Intention we seemed to be so anxious to see this Girl. The Mother received us civilly, but I could observe a visible Melancholy in her Countenance, and the Tear in her Eye. The Abbé told her in a very gallant, I ought to say impudent, Manner, that he brought her two of the most amiable and generous Cavaliers that perhaps the World could boast of; but that, as we were united with the strongest Ties of Friendship, one of us could not think of being happy without the other; and therefore the only Expedient he could think of would be, that the Gentlemen should have her Daughter in their Turns, and that the first Possession should be decided by Lots: I have told them, added he, the Price; and though it is indeed very high, yet if my Character of the Lady's Charms is approved of by them, the Bargain may be completed; so *Signora*, continued he, let your Daughter make her Appearance.

No, said she, though my unhappy Situation forces me to prostitute my Child, were it a Thousand times worse than it is, and that I had not a Morsel of Bread to put in my own and six Children's Mouths, which is indeed my present Case, and the unhappy Motive of the monstrous Step I have already taken, yet I would not only die myself, but see

them all expiring at my Feet, before I consent to her being in the Possession of more than one Man ; which alas ! is a Crime that my Soul abhors, and which will ere long be the Cause of my Death.

COME, Madam, be chearful, cried I, you have not to do with Barbarians who are insensible to Pity, and, perhaps, in the Sequel you will not be sorry to have met with us ; tho' we are, indeed, as the Abbé has told you, very dear Friends, yet in the Case of a Mistress there is no such Thing as sharing, and if you will do us the Favour to let us see your Daughter, her own Choice shall determine who is to be the happy Man ; and I do protest, having Reason to believe that my Friend will be preferred, that I will treat her with all imaginable Respect.

You speak like a Man of Honour, said the afflicted Mother ; and as your Friend's Appearance gives me the same favourable Opinion of his noble Sentiments, if there can be any Happiness in my deplorable Condition, it is that of having addressed myself to Men of Humanity and Compassion. I hope, Madam, said *Arabella*, who had not till then opened her Mouth, that we shall soon confirm you in the favourable Opinion you have of us ; and I do second my Friend's Proposal of leaving the Choice entirely to your Daughter, who shall have nothing to dread from my Attempts, if she declare in favour of my Friend. Well, said she,

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 43

I will go and bring the unhappy Victim ; upon which she retired to another Room, and soon after returned, leading in one of the most charming Girls I ever saw in my Life, and who inspired Admiration and Pity ; for, though it was plainly visible that she had been shedding Floods of Tears, yet there was such a charming Sweetness in her languishing Eyes, that no Man, I dare say, could see her and preserve his Liberty. Here, Gentlemen, said the Mother, bursting out in Tears, is the Lamb that is to be slain for the Preservation of her Mother and five other Children ; and though her just Tears, at the terrible Misfortune that hangs over her Head, may have somewhat altered her Looks, yet I think she has still but too many Charms for the Use to which her cruel Fate has designed them ; then turning to her Daughter, *Aliana*, said she, you know how long I have struggled to support our miserable Family in an honest Way, and how my poor Heart is tortured with the Thoughts of this desperate Remedy ; but as my Health and Vigour are greatly impaired by hard Labour since your Father's Death, and that I can no longer gain what is necessary to keep in Life, I hope Heaven will forgive what I now do, which, though authorized by Custom, is highly base and criminal in my Eyes : You are, my dear Child, added she, to sacrifice your Virtue and Innocence, to prevent your Mother, Brothers, and Sisters from starving, and one of these two Gentlemen are to have Possession of you as their purchased Slave, but leave it to your own
Choice

44 The TRAVELS of

Choice which of the two is to be your Master.

AH! dear Mother, cried the lovely *Aliana* falling on her Knees, rather kill me this Minute than command me to pronounce the Sentence of my own Disgrace and Ruin, I will undergo all the Hardships of Life to get Bread for you and our Family, but to become a Prostitute is what I cannot bear the Thoughts of, and no human Consideration shall make me consent to it. Here a little Girl about seven or eight Years old came running in, and said to her Mother; Mama, my Brothers and Sisters are crying their Eyes out for Victuals, I have told them twenty times that there is nothing to eat in the House; but their empty Stomachs are deaf to every Thing, and if they do not get some Refreshment soon there will be a strange adoe in this House, and indeed, my dear Mama, I am very hungry myself, but I consider that you have nothing to give me. You are a good Girl, said the poor afflicted Mother, retire, and tell your Sisters and Brothers that they shall very soon have Victuals.

WHEN the little Girl was retired, tell me *Aliana*, said she, sobbing, how I shall satisfy the Hunger of your little Brothers and Sisters? I will sell the Gown I have upon my Back, cried she, which is tolerably good, and will afford us a Months Subsistence with good Management, and I hope

hope Providence, that never totally abandons virtuous and innocent Persons, will somehow or other provide for us, but if the Tryal of our Virtue should be of a longer Duration; let us reject all sinful or shameful Means to extricate us out of our Difficulties, and it is certain, if there is any thing real in the Religion that we profess, we will here or hereafter be rewarded; and is there any Thing valuable enough in Life, to make us forfeit our Innocence in this World, and our Happiness in the next. Only let me try this Expedient for once, and if we have no better Prospect when this little Resource is gone, I will see to get into some good House as a Servant and give you what I earn for your Subsistence, if I find there is more to be got that Way than by my Needle.

NEVER Persons were more affected than my Friend and I with this moving Scene, and both of us had at the same Moment the same Thought, that it would be barbarous and cruel to leave them longer under Uncertainty; but the Question was how to get rid of the Abbé, to whom we did not incline to communicate our real Intentions. A Thought came into my Head, which I directly put in Execution; and taking him a little aside, You know, said I, that nothing is so tempting as Money, do me the Favour to step to our Banker's, and tell him that we will wait of him in an Hour or two hence, and you'll bring us Word if he will
be

be at home ; he made no other Answer but I go, and so walked out.

WHEN he was gone *Arabella* spoke to this Purpose. The unworthy Abbé, said she, addressing her Discourse to the Mother, having left us at Liberty, I can freely tell you my own and my Friend's Sentiments Your Letter, Madam, shewed your Aversion to the Scheme that Necessity forced you to have Recourse to, and we came here not with a Design to take the Advantage of your Misery, but to prevent your sacrificing your Daughter, by giving you proper Assistance ; and if this was our Intention at first, you may judge how much it is strengthened by your Grief, and the noble Resolution of the lovely *Aliana*. My Friend and I are both able and willing to change your unhappy Situation. Five hundred Sequins was to be the Price of what no Money ought to purchase, we will give her that Sum which will procure her a Husband, or be a Portion if she chuses the Convent, this shall be my Share ; and my Friend here is resolved to give you an equal Sum, with which you may fall into some honest Business to support yourself and the rest of your Children. All this is sincere, Madam, said I, and what you may depend upon, but methinks I hear the poor Children crying, let me beg of you to accept of a few Sequins for the Subsistence of your Family till we can settle every thing in the Method my Friend has proposed, upon which

which I put a Purse in her Hand, in which there was about twenty Sequins.

BOTH the Mother and Daughter seemed to be infinitely struck with Surprize, and could scarce believe what they heard, till they saw that I had actually given them my Purse; even this in their dismal Condition was a prodigious Sum which all they had in the House could scarce have raised. The sudden Effects of Joy and Surprize might have been dangerous to them both, had it not been for the Floods of Tears that gushed from their Eyes, very different from what they had shed some Minutes before. The first Thing the Mother did was to give the Purse to her Daughter. Here, said she, *Aliana*, take a *Sequin* out of this Purse, and get some Provisions immediately to refresh those starving Children; this is my first Care, and, with Gentlemen of such noble and generous Sentiments as our Benefactors show, will, I dare say, be allowed to be a Duty which ought to be discharged, even before the Acknowledgments which you and I are in Gratitude obliged to make, for no less Favour than preserving your Honour and the whole Family from perishing. The Thanks of my poor little starving Children, when eased from the Torments of devouring Hunger, will please these two generous Men more than all the studied Speeches that you and I can possibly frame.

Aliana

Aliana did not wait a second Order, but ran to the nearest Pastry Cook's Shop, and was back in a Moment with an agreeable Sight to the little Children, who came running into the Room, crying all together: Come, dear Mama, and eat some of the fine Pies that Sister *Ali*---- has brought, she is now dividing them, and we will get a brave Dinner. Go, my Children, said the Mother, and satisfy your Hunger, but do not eat too much for fear it should make you sick; I can wait till you have done. No, no, cried they all with one Voice, though we are very hungry we will eat none till you come. Make no Ceremony with us, said *Arabella*, the Demand of these pretty Children is just, and we will wait here till you eat a Bit. Those who have given me the Provisions ought to be obeyed, said she, I will therefore retire for a few Minutes, and I do not know but a little Refreshment may give *Aliana* and me more Strength to express our Thoughts of the noble and generous Procedure of our Deliverers, and she then withdrew.

WHEN *Arabella* and I were by ourselves, my dear *Alithea*, said she, what do you think of this Morning's Entertainment? Think, said I, I think Providence has brought you and me here to preserve this poor Family from Ruin and Shame; and I never in my Life thanked Heaven with more Earnestness than

than I do now for this happy Opportunity. My Sentiments and yours agree in this, said she, as they do in most other Things. What a terrible Thing is Poverty ! And how glad I am to think that this charming virtuous Maid shall not become a Prostitute for Bread to her Family ; but, added she, we must not only keep all a Secret from the wicked Abbé but discharge him from attending us any longer ; for I cannot with any Patience see this Promoter of Wickedness, I consent, said I, because as we have seen what is most curious in this Place, and by his Means are pretty well informed of the Characters of your *Venetian* Ladies, I think we have no more Occasion for him, and though we had, I am inclined to dismiss him, that he may suspect nothing of our Intentions with regard to this Family. When the Mother and Daughter return I think it will be fit to let them know our Resolution about him, and that we will return To-morrow by our selves and finish what we have begun.

IN a very short Time they both returned, but with Looks very different from their first Appearance. The heavy Load of Grief which lay upon their Spirits on the Prospect of what was to procure them the Necessaries of Life being now removed, and their Bodies refreshed by a little Nourishment, the Mother appeared quite another Creature ; and *Aliana's* Eyes, formerly languishing, were now sparkling and

lively, and no imaginary *Venus* of the Poets or Painters could exceed this charming Girl.

I believe, Gentlemen, said the Mother, upon her entering the Room, you'll perceive a great Change in my Daughter's and my Countenance, and it is no Wonder, we were Persons condemned to worse than Death, and all the hideous Prospects of Shame and Ruin were continually before our Eyes ; but now the Scene is changed, my Daughter can preserve her Innocence, and I can get Bread for my Children; what a Revolution must this produce in our whole Frame, and how highly are we indebted to the generous Authors of this blessed Change? No Words can reach the grateful Sentiments which we feel in the Bottom of our Hearts, but this is our Comfort, that Men of your Virtue and noble Way of thinking, require not even the small Recompence of Thanks from the Persons who are so highly obliged ; the Pleasure of extricating unfortunate Creatures out of the Jaws of Misery and Destruction, is the sole Motive, and carries along with it its own Reward ; and, therefore, Gentlemen, as it is impossible for me to express the Measure of your Bounty, or the Happiness of this Family as I ought, let my Admiration supply the Want of Words ; this I can only promise, that, while I live, my constant Prayers shall ascend to Heaven for you both as the Protectors of the Widow and the Fatherless : And I, cried *Aliana*, throwing
ing

ing herself upon her Knees, do this Moment pray with all the Fervour of my Soul, that Heaven may pour down its best Blessings upon my generous Deliverers from the Gulf of Sin and Shame. *Arabella* finding that her Tears were like to get the better of all her Efforts to restrain them, and to speak the Truth, I had my own Difficulties too, hastened to put a ~~Stop~~ to this Effusion of the Mother's and Daughter's Hearts, by telling them what we had resolved upon with respect to the Abbé, and of our Intention to pay them another Visit that Afternoon, in order to settle every thing to their Satisfaction; but, continued she, keep every Thing a Secret from this wicked Fellow, and break off all Correspondence with him.

You may depend upon our Obedience in every respect, said the Mother, and particularly to the last Part of your Commands, with great Pleasure. I am ashamed, indeed, and confounded, added she, at the Thoughts of the Commission I gave him, and I now see all the Horror of it; but the Cries of my poor Infants, with the Authority of Custom, made me view it in a very different Light before.

HERE the Abbé entered the Chamber, and whispered in my Ear, that the Banker would be at home to attend us; very well, said I, we have settled the Treaty here, and nothing remains but to sign, seal, and deliver; my Friend is to be the Gallant, and I

do not envy his Happiness as long as I have such a Friend as you to provide me. I then addressed my Discourse to *Arabella*. Though it is a little cruel, perhaps, to drag you out of this Place, yet as it is with a View to render you more happy when you come again, I believe you as well as that fair Lady will excuse me : Let us therefore be gone, and prepare for executing your Part of the Treaty. Yes, yes, said *Arabella*, I have nothing more at Heart than to perform my Promise, and the beautiful *Aliana* shall soon see the Effects of it ; in the mean time I would beg of her not to be afflicted with the Remembrance of past Mistortunes, or future Adversity, which last shall be my Business to prevent : After which we made our Bows and retired to our Lodgings, where after some general Conversation, *Signor Abbaté*, said I, though my Friend appeared to be very fond of that Girl, yet he scarce thinks the Possession of her, though we were to remain longer at *Venice* than we intend, worth so much Money, and therefore *Aliana* must think of another Lover. It would have been too cruel in him to undervalue her Merit to her Face, and it will be handsomer to attribute his not complying with the Mother's Terms to the Necessity we are under of leaving this Place Tomorrow or next Day, which is so true that we intend to satisfy you just now for your Services, and with that View beg to know your Demands.

I am sorry, Gentlemen, said he, that the Girl did not please you (and I believe what he said was sincere, since he was disappointed in fifty *Sequins*, which the Mother told us he was to have if the Negotiation succeeded) and that your Affairs call you so suddenly elsewhere, but as for my Trouble I make no Price with Gentlemen such as you. Come, Sir, said *Arabella*, give the Child a Name; and as my Amours have given you most Trouble it is but just I should pay for it. Sir, I refer it to your own Generosity. Since you are obstinate, said she, blame yourself if I give you less than you expect, or think you deserve. She then pulled out her Purse and put twenty *Sequins* into his Hand, with which he was very well satisfied, and wished us all Happiness in our Travels; after which he made us Half a Dozen low Bows, and obliged us with his Absence.

A little after he was gone we went to our Banker's, on whom, we had an unlimited Credit from *Lyons*. We told him that we should have Occasion to lay out a thousand *Sequins* at *Venice*, which we designed to leave in a Day or two, and for as much Money more, as would defray our Expences to *Rome*. You shall have what Money you please Gentlemen, said he, and if you will let me know your Route, I will give you Letters of Credit on the different Towns in your Way, in Case you should have Occasion for more Money than you take along with you. We

thanked him and said we would not refuse his Offer. I took Pen and Ink, and put down *Ferrara, Ravenna, Rimini, Pesaro, Fano, Senigalia, Ancona, and Loretto*, I will write to my Correspondent at *Ferrara*, said he, who shall recommend you to his at *Ravenna*, and to the other Places, either by himself or his Friends. How much Money must you have here? Twelve hundred *Sequins*, answered I, will do, with what we have in our Pockets; very well, said he, this Moment you shall have it; no said I, to morrow Morning will do as well, but as this is Post Day, if you please to reckon what we are to draw for in French Money on *Lyons*, we will now give you Bills, and while you are making out the Account, my Friend and I will write each of us a Letter to our Agents, advising them of this Draught, and ordering them to lodge Money in the Bankers Hands at *Lyons*; and if we should have Occasion to take up Money on the Road, we shall order *Bellarion* our Banker at *Rome*, on whom we have Credit, to remit you. The Account was made out, Bills of Exchange drawn, and signed by us, and our Letters of Advice to be forwarded under his Cover to *Lyons*, after which, we left our Banker, who promised to bring himself, or send us next Morning, the Money; but it is upon this Condition, Gentlemen, that you will sup with me to morrow Night, to which we agreed.

ON leaving the Banker's, we returned freight to *Signora Elmira's* the Name of *Alianna's*

na's Mother. Upon our Coming in, she told us that the Abbé had been there, and had informed them that there was nothing to be expected from you, I told him that I was very indifferent, having found Friends that would assist me, without the shameful Price of Prostitution. He then insinuated that he would be himself my Daughter's Lover, and make it his Business to supply the Family, at least, with Necssaries; upon which, in a great Passion, I ordered him to leave my House, and never to approach it more. We then told her that we had been with our Banker, who would have the Money ready next Morning. May it be allowed us Madam, said I, to inquire what you design to do with the lovely *Aliana*, and have you thought which Way you are to imploy the small Sum that you are to have in your own Hands. Truly Gentlemen, said she, I have been, since the happy Moment I first saw you, so intoxicated with the Thoughts of our good Fortune, that I have not had Time to think of any particular Plan of Life, and tho' I had, I should still submit any Scheme of mine to your Approbation, which is the least I can do to those who so generously assist me, and I dare say, my Daughter as well as I, will have no Objection to what you advise; upon which she called her. *Aliana*, said she, our generous Protectors are desirous to know how you would incline to dispose of yourself, now that, by their Liberality, you will have what will either procure you a Husband, or make you a Nun; declare your

your Sentiments freely, for I believe they will, as well as I, consent to your Establishment in the Way that is most agreeable to your Inclinations. My Duty and Obligation, said *Aliana*, are so strong to you, Madam, as the Author of my Being, and to these Gentlemen as my Deliverers from Infamy, that I will willingly submit to what you and they determine; however, as you order me to declare my real Sentiments, I will freely own that I have just now no Inclination either to a married State, or to be a Nun, and my Reason is, that though the Sum which these worthy Gentlemen are pleased to bestow upon our distressed Family be, God knows, very considerable, and which none but Persons of large Fortunes, and larger Souls, could have bestowed, yet I think it would be a very great Hardship on my Mother and five Children, that I should carry off one Half of the whole Fund, which I must do in the Case of Marriage, or the Convent, and therefore, with humble Submission, I should think it better to execute a Scheme which I have been contriving from the Moment I understood what our generous Protectors designed to do for us. You know, my dear Mother, continued she, that the Milliner Trade is very beneficial in this City, particularly when the Persons, who carry on this Branch of Business, have a Stock of Money sufficient to purchase a large Quantity of Merchandize that is proper, at the cheapest Rates; you know I can make pretty good Use of my Needle, we can hire
Journey-

• Journey-women, and take Apprentices, and thus carry on a considerable Trade ; and by the Profits of it not only support you and your Children in a decent Manner, but likewise increase our Stock. What is your Opinion, Gentlemen, of this Project ? For my Part, replied I, my Opinion is, that I like it better than your being married or becoming a Nun, though I should not have opposed either the one or the other ; and I, cried *Arabella*, find in this discreet and friendly Scheme of the lovely *Aliana* what augments my Esteem of her. The thousand *Sequins* which we shall bring them To-morrow Morning will, I hope, be a sufficient Sum to do what she says ; and though we had intended to leave *Venice* To-morrow, if my Friend, added she looking at me, would consent, we should not stir till we saw you happily settled. I not only consent to do that, said I hastily, but as our Banker is a Man of great Weight and universally acquainted, I believe it would be the Interest of these Ladies to be well acquainted with him and his Family, and even to let him into the whole Affair. Though the Part I have acted in it, said Madam *Elmira*, is far from doing me Honour, and will prove a Check in my Conscience while I live, yet, by way of Punishment, as well as for the Advantage of my Family, I freely consent to it ; let us then return directly, my Friend, said *Arabella*, to our Banker's, and tell him the Story in such a Manner as will make him a real Friend to this good Family ; To-morrow Morning, Madam, added she, you

you may expect to see him and us here with the Money which we have promised, his Advice will, no doubt, forward your Settlement, and I hope we shall have the Pleasure of seeing the Thing finished before we leave the Town : and now give us Leave to retire. Not if you please, cried the Mother in a Rapture which she could not restrain, till my Daughter and I have embraced the two best and most generous Men that ever the World produced, and this I think is not inconsistent with the strictest Rules of Modesty ; she then advanced, and took first the one and then the other in her Arms, shedding Tears of Joy ; *Aliana*, said she, follow your Mother's Example in a thing that is honourable and grateful, upon which we advanced and saluted the blushing lovely Maid.

Now my noble and kind Benefactors, said the Mother, you may go, and be assured that you shall carry along with you the best Wishes of the Widow and the Orphan.

WE went directly to our Banker's, who was surprized to see us return so soon, and judging that we wanted the Money sooner than we had told him, offered to pay us directly. We do not want the Money immediately, said *Arabella*, nor are we come upon that Score ; but to consult with you upon an Affair of Consequence that nearly concerns us, if you can spare Half an Hour from Business. Yes, yes, said he, I have a whole Hour at your Service ; take the Trouble to

go into this Closet, where we shall not be interrupted. When we were seated, I made a Sign to *Arabella*, who spoke very elegantly and concisely, to narrate the whole Adventure, which she did from the Beginning to the End, in so moving a Manner, that I observed the Banker was strongly affected by it; and, though People of his Employment are not generally very tender-hearted, at some Passages of her Story the Tear came in his Eye. When she had ended; now, Sir, said she, after what you have heard, you will not think it strange that we should beg the Favour of your Protection to this poor Family, in recommending them to Customers in the Way of their Business.

THIS Adventure, said the Banker, in the different Branches of it, opens a Scene the most interesting that, perhaps, can be met with in Story; and the Part, you have acted is so noble and glorious, that I think it ought to be made public; however, as your Modesty will not, perhaps, relish any thing of that kind, and that Ostentation has no Share in the Motives which have induced you to this noble Action, I shall only admire it in private, and contribute all that is in my Power to second your noble Intentions. But as you intend to see the Work finished before you leave this Place, that no Time may be lost in fixing them, let us go just now to their House with the Money, and before Tomorrow Night I shall have a House and Shop ready for their Reception in a proper Part of
the

the Town ; upon which we came out of the Closet, and he ordered his Cashier to put a thousand *Sequins* in a Bag, which we carried along with us to *Elmira's*, who did not expect to see us till next Morning ; and lest she should fancy any Change in our Intentions, *Arabella* hastened to tell her that the Banker, taking him by the Hand, was the Cause of our Coming sooner than we designed : He knows every Circumstance of our Adventure, Madam, continued she, and is so well disposed to render you Service, that he thought what could be conveniently done To-day ought not to be postponed till To-morrow ; and therefore he has brought the Money we promised you along with him, and resolves to have you fixed in a proper Part of the Town before To-morrow's Night, to prevent our being long detained at *Venice*.

HERE, Madam, said the Banker, presenting the Bag, is a thousand *Sequins*, which these generous Gentlemen make you a Present of, and which will be a competent Sum to set you up in the Business proposed ; what Service is in my Power to do you, with regard to Customers, you may depend upon it ; and I shall add, that upon any Occasion of an advantageous Bargain, you shall have from me what Money you want without Interest ; I shall endeavour this Afternoon to look out for a proper House and Shop for you, and send you Word To-morrow Morning where it is that you may go and view it.

THE poor Woman was so transported that she could not pronounce one single Word, but looked first on one, and then on another; at last Tears rushing down her Cheeks, and some Sighs coming to the Relief of a Heart that seemed to be over-loaded, she made this Exclamation, *Joy flows too fast on me, I dread the Effects of it*; and turning to her Daughter, *Aliana*, said she, bring me the Hart-horn Bottle, for I believe I shall faint; upon which the Banker pulled out a little Bottle, and presenting it to her, take a Tea Spoonful of this, Madam, and you will soon find the good Effects, which she did, and directly her Spirits revived.

WE left this I may now say happy Family, and after reconducting our Banker to his own House, went to take a Turn in *St. Mark's Square*, both very well pleased with what we had done.

I shall while I live, said *Arabella*, thank Providence, and I am sure so will you too, my dear *Alithea*, for throwing this favourable Opportunity in our Way of preserving a poor distressed Family from Shame and Ruin, and I can sincerely say, that I never gave Money with greater Pleasure in my Life: While we were about this Negotiation, continued she, I had still some Dread upon my Spirits, lest it should by some odd Accident or other miscarry, though in reality I had no solid Ground for such Fears; but now that it is

62 *The* TRAVELS *of*

out of the Power of Devils, or bad Men, to give it a wrong Turn, and that I have no farther Apprehensions of *Aliana's* Virtue being in Danger, I am eased of a heavy Load.

My dear *Arabella*, said I, though I have not by far so strong Motives to wish well to *Elmira's* Family as you, yet I do not repent of having contributed to their Happiness; what Motives, said she, pray can I have that are not common to us both? You surprize me. If you will promise me, said I, not to be angry, I will explain myself; that is easily done, answered she, for you know it is not in my Power. Well then, by some stolen Glances, I have more than once observed, that the lovely *Aliana* would reckon herself more happy in the Possession of your Person, than if you had given her all the Gold in *Venice*, and I am so certain of it that, I dare say, the poor Girl will be miserable in the midst of her Wealth. If I thought you were serious *Alithea*, I should be very sorry, for I esteem her greatly, and would even reveal the Secret of my Sex to her before I go, could I be persuaded that your Suspicions were true. There is nothing so easy as to be assured of the Thing, said I, make but your Court a little to her; and though I have not the least Suspicion of her Modesty and Virtue, yet I believe it will not be in her Power to conceal her Sentiments so far, but that you will discover the Truth of what I tell you. Well, I will try the Experiment, said she, and if I find it is so, I have
such

such a Regard for that virtuous Maid, that I will trust her with our Secret, which I hope will cure her. But to do this effectually, said I, you must make her a Visit without me, and sound her with all the Art that you are Mistress of. I will take your Advice, my dear Friend, said she, and I hope I shall have your Permission to tell her how unfit I am to be a Husband ; and while you are telling *Aliana*, said I smiling, that you are by no Means fit for a Lady's Use, I will go a rambling ; but remember, said she, that we are to sup at our Banker's ; and do you remember, said I, that he has two pretty Daughters who are both in *Aliana's* Case. Well thou art, replied she, the most waggish Girl that ever I knew, but I hope before we have ended our Travels I shall have my Turn. I wish you may, said I, for I should be mighty well pleased to break Half a Dozen Hearts before I throw off my Breeches ; in the mean time, sweet *Chevalier de Montferan*, go and tell the lovely *Aliana* that you and she can make no Hand of it together, and I will meet you at the Banker's, if some pretty *Signora* does not run away with me, which if she does, cried *Arabella*, she will curse her Fate for making so bad a Choice, for I look upon the *Chevalier de Radpont*, as a Person who, perhaps, may have a little more Assurance than I ; but as for his Capacity, if he has more I am very much deceived. No more of this, my dear *Arabella*, for of all Things in the World it would be the oddest, that you and I should fall out about Manhood, therefore go to your

64 *The TRAVELS of*

Task, and leave me a little to the Direction of my own whimsical Brain. I know you are a ramping mad Girl, said she, and I am afraid to let you go by yourself, remember the *Italian Genius*, a Poniard and Poison are the *Vade mecum*s of this jealous Nation. I'll take Care of Number One, I warrant you, cried I, so farewell for a few Hours.

SHE went to *Aliana's*, and I to take a more exact Survey of what was to be seen in and about *St. Mark*, which we had but very transiently viewed, and first I went to examine the two large Columns erected in *St. Mark's Street*, where it is bounded by the Sea, the one of *Egyptian*, the other of *European Granite of Lemnos*, called by *Flaminus Vacca Granito dell' Albo*: From thence I returned to *St. Mark*, on the Front of which we see four brazen Horses, of a beautiful Figure, which, as Report bears, were formerly sent to *Rome* a Present to the Emperor *Nero*, by a certain King of *Parthia*. They were removed hence, as I was told, by *Constantine* to the City that bears his Name, and at last, when *Constantinople* was taken by the *Franks* and *Venetians*, were brought to *Venice* by the Care of *Henricus Dandalus*.

IN the Chapel of Cardinal *Zeno* I read this Inscription on a carved Image of the blessed Virgin *Μητέρα Θεού η άνίκητος*, *The invincible Mother of God*. On the left Side is a Marble Table fixed in the Wall, in which are three Holes placed in a triangular Position, too small

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 65

small to admit the little Finger. A Greek Stanza of four Jambicks engraved there seems to prove that they were three slender Canals of a Spring led to Constantinople by the Emperor Michael.

THERE is a Latin Version of the Greek cut below it which runs thus.

*Aqua quæ prius ex petra mirabiliter fluxit,
Oratione Prophetæ Mosis producta est.
Nunc autem hæc Michaelis studio labitur,
Quem Serva, Christe, & conjugem Iranem.*

Thus in English by the Translator of
Montfaucon.

*When Water from the Rock o'erjoyed the
Land,
It sprung by Moses' Wonder-working
Hand:
This Fountain flows by Michael's artful
Care,
For whom, and for his Consort, lend a
Prayer.*

IN the Treasury and Repository of St. Mark I saw great Quantities of precious Stones and rich Furniture, but what I took greatest Notice of were the twelve Golden Breast-plates set with Gems formerly used, they say, by the twelve Maids of Honour to the Empress Helena, and twelve Coronets adorned in the same Manner, and for the same Use. A Vessel of Emerald, and others

66 *The* TRAVELS *of*

formed each of one entire precious Stone, a Chalcedony, Agate, Sardonyx, and another of a larger Size of a Turquoise shaped like a Bowl, with an *Egyptian* or *Arabic* Inscription upon it, which the Procurator told me signify'd *God the Artist*.

FROM thence I went to the Repository of Relicks, where the first Thing produced was a Cross made of the real Cross of Christ, with a long *Greek* Inscription in four Jambicks which we find at full Length in *Montfaucon*, though they assured me it had been read by no Man.

Thus rendered by the *English* Translator.

1. My final Present thus I humbly give,
 Thus near as I approach the Gates of
 Death,
 A Gift divine, the Tree by which we live,
 Tho' here thy Sorrows ended with thy
 Breath.

2. Since thou hast set me free from destin'd
 Woe,
 And Constancy in Pain is thy Com-
 mand;
 Accept this Offer of my dying Vow,
 And kindly lead me to the promis'd
 Land.

3. In

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 67

3. In Gold and Silken Robes, I once was
gay,

Royal *Irena*, of the *Duca* Line ;
But now in homely Weeds I pass the Day,
Which in my Eye beyond the Purple
shine.

4. Since I have quitted all my Pomp of
State,

And made the gloomy Grave my single
Care ;
Do thou among the bless'd retrieve my
Fate,
And make me thy eternal Triumph's
Share.

ON a Box, in which they say some Drops
of our Saviour's Blood are preserved, is this
Verse.

ἔχεις με Χριστέ, διὰ τοῦτο καὶ ἐν σοὶ μένω.

i. e.

Where my Blood is, there I, your Lord, reside.

THEY shew you a Knife used by Christ
in the last Supper, on the Handle of which
are some *Hebrew* Characters but not leg-
ible.

I like-

I likewise saw the Pillar to which they told me our Saviour was bound when scourged, but the Monks of *Vallis Umbrosa* at *Rome* assert, that the true and genuine Pillar is at the Church of *St. Praxedes*.

I rambled to and fro till it was near the Time of going to our Banker's, where I found *Arabella*; she had been there a whole Hour entertaining the Ladies, who desired no better Company. We supped all together, and the Conversation was very gay and chearful; but the poor Girls greedily sucked in the delicious Poison, and I fancy they passed many a terrible Day and Night after we left *Venice*.

WELL, said I, my dear *Arabella*, when we were by our selves at our own Lodgings, did I prophesy right, and is not *Aliana* among the Number of your Conquests? I believe, said she, Gratitude inspires *Aliana* with Sentiments that are near a-kin to Love, but they are equally shared between you and me, and consequently cannot be what you suspected; at least if her Heart gives me the Preference, her Tongue is so guarded in its Expressions, that all my Art could not make her alter her Tone, though I assure you I acted the Lover so naturally, that I believe she really thinks I am smitten, but neither by her Looks, Actions, or Words, could I find that her Breast glowed with any other Sentiments
but

but what pure Friendship Inspires ; so that for once, my dear *Alithea*, you are out in your Conjectures, and I am so far perswaded of it, that I thought it was intirely needless to undeceive her as to my Sex ; that lovely Girl's whole Thoughts are taken up about her Family, and the Solidity of her Judgment is not less to be admired than her Virtue and Beauty. I was heartily glad that I had been mistaken, for I had so great an Esteem for the lovely virtuous *Aliana*, that I should have been sorry to hear that she had fallen in Love with what she could never possess ; and I very seriously told my Friend that nothing could give me more Pleasure than to be convinced of my Mistake.

Our Banker was as good as his Word in providing our Friends with a House and Shop, in one of the most publick Streets in Town ; so that in four Days *Elmira* and her Family were settled in their new Habitation, and their Shop well furnished with Millenary Ware, which the Banker procured for them at the first Hand.

As nothing detained us longer at *Venice* we prepared to be gone, and with that Design went to take Leave of our Family, as we called them ; but *Elmira* and her Daughter begged so earnestly that we would do them the Honour to sup with them in their new Habitation before we left the Town, that we could not handsomely get off : my Daughter, said *Elmira*, shall wait upon the Banker and

and invite him, with his Lady and Daughters, to come and keep you Company.

As our Stay has been longer, said *Arabella*, at *Venice* than we intended, though we do not regret the Occasion, since we cannot refuse your Invitation, if it is convenient for you, let it be this Night without Ceremony, that you may be the last whom we shall converse with in this City, and the only Persons indeed whom we are sorry to leave. I believe, said she, you will do us the Justice to be persuaded that it is impossible we can ever forget you; I shall take Care to repeat your Names so often to my Children, and tell them too that all they have in the World is owing to your Bounty, that I hope to their dying Day (when I am dead and gone) they will pray that Heaven may reward you here and hereafter.

I shall not repeat what passed at our Entertainment, which was delicate without Prodigality, and would have been extremely agreeable, had it not been seasoned with superabundant Encomiums, which put *Arabella* and me very often to the Blush. In short, we spent the Evening with that Openness and Friendship which make Company agreeable to one another, and though I had made a wrong Judgment with regard to *Aliana*, if there was any Conjecture to be drawn from what may be called amorous Glances, and smothered Sighs, the Banker's two Daughters were both deeply smitten with my Friend's Charms,

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 71

Charms, and I really pitied the poor Girls, who were like to drop down when we came to the dismal Moment of Adieu ; and had I not made a Sign to *Arabella* to retire, they certainly must have exposed themselves. Besides, to speak the Truth, the Scene in general was so moving, and Tears pouring in such Streams from all our Eyes that I could have wished myself twenty Miles off, particularly when *Elmira's* little Children came about their Mother, begging she would not weep now that they had got a better House and Victuals in Plenty.

My Children, said the tender *Elmira*, go and thank these Gentlemen, for it is their Money that has brought you to this fine House, and will get Victuals for you as long as you live ; they are now going to leave us, and we shall, perhaps, never see them more. Oh Mama ! cried they weeping, do not let them go, for you may want Money again and who will give it to you : With that they came running about us, and clasping us in their little Arms ; dear Gentlemen, said they with heaving Breasts, you will break our poor Mama and Sister *Ali---*'s Hearts if you go away ; see how they are both weeping --- do not be so cruel as to leave us ; for though our Mother and *Ali---* should die, as long as we have you in the House with us we shall not want Victuals, so dear Gentlemen think of that : Do not be afraid my Dears, cried *Arabella*, for if your dear Mama should die, we will come back and take Care of
you ;

you ; will you indeed, said they ? Yes, yes, answered I, you shall never want Victuals more : Upon which, they all ran towards their Mother ; weep no more, dear Mama, cried they, you hear what the Gentlemen have promised, and we are sure they will be as good as their Word. A Person must have a Heart as hard as a Rock not to be affected with such Scenes as these, I mean of the little Children, which happened very a-propos to prevent the Company's taking Notice of the terrible Confusion of the Banker's two Daughters, which might be attributed to the Effects of tender-heartedness, a Quality rather than a Defect in the Constitution of the Female Sex.

In fine, we bid a last Adieu to our dear Friends, and retired to our Lodgings with Hearts joyful that we had successfully finished the Re-establishment of *Elmira's* Family, but grieved, at least mine was, for the unhappy Flame which *Arabella* had kindled in the Breasts of the unfortunate Sisters, of which I had seen so many and visible Symptoms that I was absolutely positive about it, and forced *Arabella* at last to own, that they had been a little unguarded in their Looks ; but that Whim, said she, or rather Vapour will soon be dissipated, when it wants Nourishment. I wish it may be so, said I, but if I am not deceived the Poison has sunk too deep in their Hearts to be easily expelled. No, no, my dear cried she, Absence and other Objects will make all right again, if it

it be true that you are not mistaken about them.

WE hired a Bark for *Ferrara*, and in our Way thither saw several Mouths of the *Po*, by which it empties itself into the *Adriatic*. The Curious may look into *Lucan's* Description of this River, which before its Fall into the Gulf, receives into its Channel the most considerable Rivers of *Piemont*, *Milan*, and the rest of *Lombardy*.

AT *Ferrara* we met nothing extraordinary. The Town is very large, but extremely thin of People. It has a Citadel and something like a Fortification running round it, but so large that it requires more Soldiers to defend it than the Pope has in his whole Dominions. The Streets are extremely beautiful in their Length, Breadth, and Regularity. We here saw *Ariosto's* Monument.

WE came down a Branch of the *Po*, as far as *Alberto* within ten Miles of *Ravenna*. All this Space lyes miserably uncultivated till you come near *Ravenna*, where the Soil is made extremely fruitful. It is situated in a flat Country three Miles West of the *Adriatic Sea*, and Fourscore South of *Venice*. It was the Residence of the Emperor *Honorius*, and of many of the *Gothic* Kings, and afterwards the Capital of the Eastern Emperors Dominions in *Italy*, where their Viceroy or

Exarchs held their Courts. Good Water was always so scarce here, that it was preferred to Wine, according to *Mart. L. 5.*

*Sit Cisterna mihi quam Vineæ malo Ravennæ,
Cum possim multo vendere pluris Aquam.*

Lodg'd at *Ravenna*, Water sells so dear
A Cistern to a Vineyard I prefer.

Addison.

*Callidus imposuit nuper mihi Caupo Ravennæ,
Cum peterem mixtum vendidit ille merum.*

By a *Ravenna* Vintner once betray'd,
So much for Wine and Water mix'd I paid,
But when I thought the Purchas'd Liquor
mine,

The Rascal fobb'd me off with only Wine.

ibid.

THE Translator rather chuses to give Mr. *Addison's* Version of these Passages out of *Martial*, than to render the *French* Prose of the Manuscript into *English*.

From *Ravenna* we went to *Rimini*, and passed the *Rubicon* by the Way, which some take to be the modern *Pisatello*, and others another small Stream near it ; but however that be, the *Rubicon* was the Boundary between *Gaul* and *Italy* ; and it was made
Treason

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu* 75

Treason either for the *Roman* Officers or Soldiers to pass the River in their military Habits. This it was that made *Julius Cæsar* halt here for some Time in his March towards *Rome*, but having weighed the Consequence he cried out at Length,

EATUR, QUO DEORUM OSTENTA,
ET INIMICORUM INIQUITAS VO-
CAT: JACTA EST ALEA.

Which, according to the *French* Translation,
runs thus ;

*Let us go where the Approbation of the Gods
and the Baseness of our Enemies loudly call :
the Die is thrown.*

IF we may believe *Lucan* this River is not so very contemptible as it is generally represented, and was much increased by the melting of the Snows when *Cæsar* passed it.

*Fonte cadit modico parvisque impellitur undis
Punicus Rubicon, cum fervida canduit æstas :
Perque imas serpit Valles, et Gallica certus
Limes ab Ausoniis disternat Arva colonis :
Tunc vires præbebat Hyems, atque auxerat
undas*

*Tertia jam gravido pluvialis Cynthia Cornu,
Et madidis Euri resolutæ flatibus Alpes.*

While Summer lasts, the Streams of *Rubicon*
From their spent Source in a small Current
run,

Hid in the winding Vales they gently glide,
And *Italy* from neighb'ring *Gaul* divide;
But now with Winter Storms increas'd, they
rose

By watry Moons produc'd, and *Alpine* Snows,
That melting on the hoary Mountains lay,
And in warm Eastern Winds dissolv'd away.

Addison.

Rimini is in a declining Condition at present, having neither Trade nor Harbour, for which it was considerable anciently; but the Sea is retired a Mile from it, and it has nothing modern to boast of. The Antiquities are as follow. A Marble Bridge of five Arches, built by *Augustus* and *Tiberius*, as appears by the Inscription. A triumphal Arch raised by *Augustus*, which makes a noble Gate to the Town, though Part of it is ruined. The Ruins of an Amphitheatre. The *Suggestum*, on which they pretend *Julius Cæsar* stood when he harangued his Army after having passed the *Rubicon*, which is indeed not very likely, because this is of hewn Stone, like the Pedestal of a Pillar, but something higher than ordinary, and is but just broad enough for one Man to stand upon it, whereas the ancient *Suggestum*, as has been observed

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 77

served on Medals, as well as on *Constantine's* Arch, were made of Wood, like a little kind of Stage, on which we see the Emperor, and two or three general Officers sometimes sitting and sometimes standing, as they made Speeches, or distributed a Congiary to the Soldiers or People. They were, probably, always in readiness and carried among the Baggage of the Army, whereas this at *Rimini* must have been built on the Place, and required some time before it could be finished.

AT twelve Miles Distance from *Rimini* stands the little Republic of *St. Marino*, which we were curious to see, though it lyes out of the common Tour of Travellers, and has evcessively bad Way to it.

THE Town and Republick of *St. Marino* stands on the Top of a very high and craggy Mountain, and lay under Snow, though it was clear and pretty warm Weather in all the Country about it.

THERE is not a Spring or Fountain, we were told, in the whole Dominions, but they are always well provided with huge Cisterns and Reservoirs of Rain and Snow-water. The Wine that grows on the Sides of their Mountains is generally reckoned better than any on the cold Side of the *Appenines*.

THE Sovereign Power of this petty Republic was lodged originally in what they call the *Arengo*, a great Council, in which every House had its Representative. But because they found too much Confusion in such a Multitude of Statesmen, they devolved their whole Authority into the Hands of the Council of Sixty. The *Arengo*, however, is still called together in Cases of extraordinary Importance; and if, after due Summons, any Member absents himself, he is to be fined to the Value of about a Penny *English*, which the Statute says he shall pay, *without Favour or Diminution*. This Council of Sixty (which notwithstanding the Name, consists but of forty Persons) is made up half out of the noble Families, and half out of the *Plebeian*. They decide all by balloting, are not admitted till Twenty-five Years old, and chuse the Officers of the Commonwealth.

THE chief Officers of the Commonwealth are the two *Capitaneos*, who have such a Power as the old *Roman* Consuls had, but are chosen every six Months. The third Officer is the Commissary, who judges in all Civil and criminal Matters. But because the many Alliances, Friendships, and Inter-marriages, as well as the personal Feuds and Animosities that happen among so small a People, might obstruct the Course of Justice, if one of their own Number had the Distribution of it, they have always a Foreigner for this Employ, whom

whom they chuse for three Years, and maintain out of the publick Stock. He must be a Doctor of Law, and a Man of known Integrity. The Fourth Man in the State is the Physician, who must likewise be a Stranger, and is maintained by a publick Sallary. He is obliged to keep a Horse to visit the Sick, and to inspect all Drugs that are imported. He must be at least Thirty-five Years old, a Doctor of the Faculty, and eminent for his Religion and Honesty, that his Rashness or Ignorance may not unpeople the Commonwealth. And that they may not suffer long under any bad Choice, he is elected only for three Years. Another Person who makes no ordinary Figure in the Republic, is the School-master. You can scarce meet with any in the Place that has not some Tincture of Learning. We saw a Latin Book in Folio of their Statutes, and the Chapter on the publick Ministers says, that when an Ambassador is dispatched from the Republick to any Foreign State, he shall be allowed, out of the Treasury, to the Value of a Shilling a Day.

THE People are esteemed very honest and rigorous in the Execution of Justice, and seem to live more happy and contented among their Rocks and Snow, than others of the *Italians* do in the pleasantest Vallies of the World. Nothing, indeed, can be a greater Instance of the natural Love that Mankind has for Liberty, and of their Aversion to an arbitrary Government, than such a Savage

80 *The TRAVELS of*

vage Mountain covered with People, and the *Campania of Rome*, which lies in the same Country, almost destitute of Inhabitants.

IN our Way from *Rimini* to *Loretto* we passed through *Pesaro*, *Fano*, *Senigalia*, and *Ancona*. In each of these Towns is a beautiful Marble Fountain, where the Water runs continually through several little Spouts which looks very refreshing in these hot Countries, and gives a great Coolness to the Air about them.

Ancona is much the most considerable of these Towns. It stands on a Promontory, and looks more beautiful at a Distance than when you are in it. The Port was made by *Trajan*, for which he has a triumphal Arch erected to him by the Sea Side.

FROM *Ancona* we went to *Loretto*, about fifteen Miles distant. Every body knows, who has read any Books of Travels, the Story of the *Holy House*, viz. that it was the Blessed Virgin's Chamber near *Jerusalem*, in which she was born and saluted by the Angel; that she conceived and brought up her Son *Jesus* here till he was twelve Years of Age; that after the Ascension of our Saviour the Apostles consecrated it to the Honour of the Blessed Virgin, and *St. Luke* drew a Picture of her which is preserved here to this Day! That the Natives apostatizing from the Faith of Christ, and becoming the Disciples of *Mahomet*, the Angels carried it into *Dalmatia*,

tia, and placed it on a Mountain there called *Terfatto*, near the Gulf of *Venice* (but as to the Time of this memorable Event they are not perfectly agreed, whether it was on the 9th, 10th, or 12th of *May* 1291, or in the Year 1294.) But the People of the Country not expressing a due Veneration for it here, three Years and seven Months after, the Angels transported it over the Sea to a Wood in the Territories of *Recanati*, belonging to a noble Lady named *Loretto*, from whence it obtained the Name of *our Lady of Loretto*. After it had remained eight Months here, on Account of the Wickedness of the Natives, it was removed a third time to the Hill where it stands at present ; but a Controversy arising between two Brothers to whom the Ground belonged, four Months after it was removed a little farther into a High-way, and here they built over it a magnificent Church the present Cathedral ; under the Middle of the Cupola whereof it now remains, and the better to preserve it, they erected four Walls of white *Parian* Marble, which surround the holy Chamber at the Distance of Half a Foot.

THE Riches in the holy House and Treasury are surprizingly great. Silver can scarce find an Admission, and Gold itself looks but poorly among such an incredible Number of precious Stones. There will be, in a few Ages more, the Jewels of the greatest Value in *Europe*, if the Devotion of the Princes continues in its present Fervour.

FROM

FROM *Loretto* in our Way to *Rome* we passed through *Recanati*, *Macerata*, *Valentino*, and *Foligni*, in which last we visited the Convent of Nuns, called *La Contessa*, that has in the Church an incomparable *Madonna* of *Raphael*. The famous Aqueduct at *Spolletto*, the next Town on the Road, deserves to be viewed by a Traveller ; it conveys the Water from Mount *St. Francis* to the Town, and for its Height is not to be equalled by any other in *Europe*. They reckon from the Foundation of the lowest Arch to the Top of it 230 Yards. In our Way hence to *Terni*, we saw the River *Clitumnus*, celebrated by so many of the Poets for a particular Quality in its Waters, of making Cattle white that drink of it.

WE went a little out of our Way to see the famous Cascade about three Miles from *Terni*. It is formed by the Fall of the River *Velino*, which *Virgil* mentions in the seventh *Æneid*. ---- *Rosæa rura Velini*.

THE Channel of this River lyes very high, and is shaded on all Sides by a green Forest made up of several Kinds of Trees that preserve their Verdure all the Year. The neighbouring Mountains are covered with them, and by reason of their Height, are more exposed to the Dews and drizzling Rains than any of the adjacent Parts, which gives Occasion to *Virgil's Rosæa rura* (*Dewy Countries*.)

THE

THE River runs extremely rapid before its Fall, and rushes down a Precipice of a hundred Yards. It throws itself into the Hollow of a Rock, which has probably been worn by such a constant Fall of Water. It is impossible to see the Bottom on which it breaks for the Thickness of the Mist that rises from it, which looks at a Distance like Clouds of Smoke ascending from some vast Furnace, and distils in perpetual Rains on all the Places that lie near it.

IT is highly probable that this is the Gulf through which *Virgil's Alecto* shoots herself into Hell; for the very Place, the great Reputation of it, the Fall of Waters, the Woods that encompass it, with the Smoke and Noise that arise from it, are all pointed at in the Description.

Dryden has translated this Passage of the *Æneid*, in the following Manner.

*In midst of Italy, well known to Fame,
There lies a Vale, Amfancus is the Name,
Below the lofty Mounts on either Side
Thick Forests the forbidden Entrance hide :
Full in the Centre of the sacred Wood
An Arm ariseth off the Stygian Flood ;
Which falling from on high, with bellowing
Sound
Whirls the black Waves and rattling Stones
around.*

Here

*Here Pluto pants for Breath from out his
Cell,*

And opens wide the grinning Jaws of Hell.

To this infernal Gate the Fury flies,

*Here hides her hated Head, and frees the
lab'ring Skies.*

THE River *Valino*, after having found its Way out from among the Rocks where it falls, runs into the *Nera*.

FROM this we went to *Narni*, where we saw *Augustus's* Bridge, which stands Half a Mile from the Town, and is one of the stateliest Ruins in *Italy*.

FROM *Narni* we went to *Atricoli*, a mean little Village, and turned about Half a Mile out of the Road, to see the Ruins of the old *Ocriculum* that lies near the Banks of the *Tiber*. There are still scattered Pillars and Pedestals, huge Pieces of Marble half buried in the Earth, Fragments of Towers, subterraneous Vaults, bathing Places; and the like Marks of its ancient Magnificence.

THE Fatigue of our crossing the *Apenines*, and of our whole Journey from *Loretto* to *Rome*, was very agreeably relieved by the Variety of Scenes we passed through. We were sometimes shivering on the Top of a bleak Mountain; and a little While after basking in a warm Valley. Sometimes our Road led us through Groves of Olives, or
by

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 85

by Gardens of Oranges, or into several hollow Apartments among the Rocks and Mountains that look like so many natural Green-houses ; as being always shaded with a great Variety of Trees and Shrubs that never lose their Verdure.

ON the 25th of *November* we arrived at *Rome*, and went directly to *Bellario* our Banker's, to whom we had wrote upon the Road to hire a House and Coach for us, both which we found ready upon our Arrival. How glad was I to see myself in this once Mistress of the World ; and as we resolved to spend the remaining Part of the Winter in it, I intended to take up a good Part of my Time in satisfying my Curiosity, particularly in viewing all the Monuments of the old *Roman* Grandeur, which gave me more Pleasure than the grandest modern Buildings, and what added to my Pleasure I found *Arabella's* Taste was so far changed, that she resolved to see every thing as well as I. The first Thing we did after being settled in our House was to pay our Respects to the Duke de *St. Agnan*, Embassador from *France*, who received us very graciously, and offered to present us not only to his Holiness the Pope but to introduce us to the Cardinals and principal Nobility of *Rome*, and was as good as his Word, so that in a short Time we were very well known, and very well received by the Persons of the greatest Distinction, and were I to put down all the Conquests and Billet-doux that my Friend received during our long Stay here, they would make a Volume by them-

Vol. III. H selves;

selves ; but what is more surprizing even I myself made Conquests among the Fair Sex, which did not a little flatter my Vanity; but for *Arabella* she was the Darling of all *Rome*, the old Pope not excepted, who could not hinder himself from saying, that if the *Chevalier de Montferan* was not very modest and virtuous, he might do a great Deal of Mischief ; but consider, Sir, said he, that you are now in a Place where Continnence is a Virtue, and intriguing very dangerous. Could I be but so happy, said *Arabella* kneeling, as to have your Holiness's Blessing, it would guard me against all the Temptations to which Youth are exposed ; that shall not be wanting, said the holy Father, so clapped his Hand on her Head and gave her his Blessing. Though my Charms were not equal to her's, yet as I knew that the Pope's Blessing was as beneficial to me as it could be to her, in the View that he had given it, I fell upon my Knees too, and was blessed by the Head of the Church.

THE next Thing we did was to get a Virtuoso to accompany us, and to explain the Antiquities, Inscriptions, &c. but, to our great Satisfaction and Surprize, he happened to be a Man of Honour and Piety, and not at all qualified for assisting us as a Procurer.

Rome affords so vast a Variety of agreeable Objects, that one knows not where to begin much less where to end.

Of all the the Theatres and Amphitheatres that were in old *Rome* there are only

ly the Ruins of three now remaining, viz. some small Footsteps of the Amphitheatre of *Statilius Taurus* near the Church of *St. Croce*. Some Part of the Walls of the Theatre of *Marcellus*, on which the Palace of the *Savelli* stands. And Part of the Amphitheatre of *Titus*, now called the *Coliseo*.

THE chief *Pagan* Temples remaining are, 1st, The *Pantheon* or Temple of the Gods, usually called the *Rotunda*, and now dedicated to the Virgin *Mary* and *All Saints*. 2. The Temple of *Fortune*, at present called *St. Maria Egyptiaca*, and is an intire Piece of Antiquity. 3. The Temple of the *Sun*, or of *Vesta*, now a Christian Church, called *La Madonna del Sole*. 4. The Temple of *Dianna Aventine*, now called *St. Sabina*. 5. The Temple of *Hercules Aventine*, now dedicated to *St. Alexis* and *Boniface*, on the Top of Mount *Aventine*. 6. The Temple of *Janus*, in the Market for Beasts, a Building exactly square, with four Fronts, resembling a triumphal Arch more than a Temple; on each Front are 12 Niches for as many Statues, representing the Months of the Year, which *Janus* was held to govern. 7. The Temple of *Concord*, or rather the Remains of it, there being only the Portico left, sustained by eight great Marble Pillars of one Stone each, and standing on the Ascent from the *Forum Romanum* to the Capitol. 8. The Temple of *Saturn*, in which the *Romans* kept the *Tabulæ Elephantinæ*, which contained the Names of the 35 Tribes of the City; it stands at the Foot of the

88 *The* TRAVELS *of*

Capitol near the Arch of *Severus*. 9. The Temple of *Antonine* and *Faustina* in the *Forum Romanum*. 10. The Temple of *Romulus* and *Remus*, but very little of the ancient Temple left. 11. The Temple of *Isis* and *Serapis*, or of the *Sun* and *Moon*, now *New St. Mary's*; the small Ruins of the ancient Temple which remain are behind the Cloyster. 12. The Temple of *Peace*, in the *Campo Vaccino*, begun by *Claudius* and finished by *Vespasian*, in which were laid up the rich Spoils found in *Solomon's Temple*, on the taking of *Jerusalem*, till this City was plundered in its Turn by *Alaric King* of the *Goths*. This exceeded all the other Temples in *Rome* in its Dimensions, as may still be discerned by the vast Ruins of the Foundation. 13. The Temple of *Jupiter Stator* in the *Campo Vaccino* of which there now remains no more than three Marble Pillars. 14. The Temple of *Jupiter Tonans*, or the Thunderer, erected near the Capitol by *Augustus* on his being preserved, as it is said, from a Flash of Lightning, which fell on his Litter and killed his Servant, of which there remains no more at present than three Pillars of the *Doric Order*, half buried in the Ruins. 15. The Temple of *Faunus*, now a Christian Church, called *St. Stephano rotundo*, situate on Mount *Celius*. 16. The Temple of *Hercules Callaicus*, now *Galuzo*, the Roof consisting of a Cupola little less than the *Pantheon*. 17. The Temple of *Bacchus*, now the Church of *St. Constantia*, we here see an ancient Monument of *Porphyry*, called the
Tomb

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 89

Tomb of *Bacchus*, which resembles a large Chest finely engraved with Branches of Trees, Boys trading of Grapes, Birds and other Animals; several Parts of the Roof also are beautified with Bunches of Grapes, and other Things belonging to a Vintage in *Mosaic* Work.

THE triumphal Arches still remaining are those of *Septimus Severus*, *Constantine the Great*, *Vespasian* and his Son *Titus* in the *Via Sacra*, *Galenus*, and another to the Honour of *Septimus Severus* and his Son, all which are entire and grand, particularly *Constantine's*, which is not only the noblest in *Rome* but in the whole World.

THE *Thermæ*, or Baths of ancient *Rome*, were esteemed some of the most magnificent Buildings in the City, of which there are still considerable Ruins remaining, particularly of *Antonine's*, at the Foot of Mount *Aventine*, and appears more like a great Town than a single Fabrick. The Walls are still vastly thick and high, and it contained 1600 Seats of polished Marble, for as many Persons to sit and bath in separately; some of these bathing Places were floored with Silver, and the Pipes which brought in the Water were of the same Mettal; the Walls being adorned with Statues, Pictures and precious Stones. 2. The Baths of *Dioclesian*, which had Seats for 3000 People, who might bath without seeing one another, the Ruins whereof are seen at *St. Maria de Angelis*, and the

Carthusian Church is composed of Part of this Bath, particularly eight noble Marble Pillars of this Church, with their Cornices of Composite Work exquisitely wrought, serve as a Model of that Order to the modern Architects. 3. The Baths of *Constantine* built before his Conversion, which stood at the Foot of *Monte Cavallo*, a third Part whereof is still remaining. There are also some small Ruins of those of *Nero*, near the Church of *St. Eustachius*; of those of *Paulus Emilius* near *St. Dominick's*; and of *Agrippa's* near the *Pantheon*.

Of Columns there are four remaining, besides those which belong to Temples, viz. *Trajan's*, *Antoninus's*, the *Columna Milliaria*, and the *Columna Rostrata*. I only name them as well as all the other Antiquities; and if what I insert be not curious I hope at least it will not be tedious, and may serve as a Direction to any Traveller who happens to be at *Rome*, and inclines to view those glorious Remains of the ancient *Roman Grandeur*.

AMONG the Antiquities of *Rome*, those who go under the Names of *Catacombs* are not the least surprizing, which are narrow subterraneous Vaults, with a Variety of Windings and Turnings in the Nature of a Labyrinth, by which the Suburbs of ancient *Rome* were in a Manner undermined. They are generally about 5 Feet and a Half high, and wide enough for two Men to go a-breast. On each Side of these Passages are two or three Rows

Rows of *Loculi*, or Graves cut out of the Rock or Sand (as the Nature of the Ground is) like Troughs each of them capable of receiving a Body. I shall not trouble the Reader with the different Opinions whether the Christian Martyrs or the Heathens were buried here, though upon the whole I am apt to believe the latter.

OF the ancient Tombs, or *Mausolea* in Rome, there are still the Traces of Four, viz. *Moles Adriani*, now the Castle of *St. Angelo*, which was the *Mausoleum* of the Emperor *Adrian*. Pope *Boniface* converted it into a Fortrefs, and succeeding Popes have improved it. *Alexander VI.* built a long close Gallery from the Palace of the *Vatican* to this Castle, through which he might retire on any Tumult or Insurrection in the City. 2. The *Mausoleum* of *Augustus* built of white Marble, of a round Figure, encompassed by three circular Walls, the Circumference of the outermost being the largest, and joined to that in the Middle by a circular Plain, and that to the innermost by another; so that the Fabrick consisted of three Stories, or Walks, lessening gradually as they advanced in Height, and planted with Evergreens, whose lasting Verdure was supposed to represent eternal Life. It was adorned with many fine Statues, Pillars and Obelisks, and stood near the Church of *St. Rock*, whereof little more remains at present than the Ruins, from which, however, the Design of the ancient Structure may still be discerned. 3. The Tomb of
Caius

Caius Cestus, which stands in the Wall near *St. Paul's Gate*, is a square Pyramid ending in a sharp Point One hundred and twenty Foot high, and Ninety Foot broad at the Base. The Fourth is the Tomb of *Metella* the Wife of *Crassus*, and stands in the *Via Appia* near *St. Sebastian*, vulgarly called *Capo de Bove*, from the Heads of Oxen carved on the Walls.

OF fifty Obelisks which were in ancient *Rome*, there are not more than ten or eleven yet dug out of the Rubbish. They were all of them brought from *Egypt*, and are of a red and white Marble, so hard and durable that it will even resist the Fire for a considerable Time: They are of a quadrangular Figure, broad at the Base, and narrow towards the Top, representing the Rays of the Sun, adorned by the *Egyptians* under the Name of *Osiris*, and deemed by them the Residence of Beings, Genius's, and the Souls of the Universe.

THE grandest Obelisk now in *Rome* stands in the Piazza before *St. Peter's Church*, formerly dedicated to *Augustus* and *Tiberius*, and was brought hither from the *Circus of Nero*. It is one intire Piece of Granite, 72 Foot high, 12 Foot Square at the Base, and eight at the Top, and weighed Nine hundred fifty six thousand One hundred forty eight Pounds, and is now about Four thousand Years old. It lay many Years buried in the Ruins of *Nero's Circus*, and after it was found, its immense Weight deterred several Architects from attempting to erect it, till *Dominico Fontana*,

Fontana, by the Encouragement of *Sixtus V.* set it on a Pedestal 38 Foot in Height, to the Astonishment of all that saw it.

2. THE Obelisk of *St. John de Lateran* has three Rows of Hieroglyphicks on each Face of it, and is the largest in *Rome*, being 180 Foot in Height without the Pedestal or Cross. It was anciently consecrated to the Sun in the City of *Thebes*, about 1200 Years before our Saviour; sent to *Rome* by the Son of the Emperor *Constantine*, and set up in the *Circus Maximus*, where it was found not many Years since covered with Rubbish, and broken in three Pieces, cemented together, and erected again by the abovementioned *Fontana*.

3. THE Obelisk in the *Piazza del Popolo* was brought from *Heliopolis* in *Egypt* by *Augustus*, and dedicated to the Sun in the *Circus Maximus*, where it lay a long Time broken in Pieces, but was set together and erected again in the Place where it now stands by the said *Fontana* at the Expence of *Sixtus V.*

4. The Obelisk near the Church of *St. Maria Maggiore* was set up in the *Mausoleum* of *Augustus* by the Emperor *Claudius*.

5. THAT in the *Piazza Navona* was taken from the *Circus* of *Caracalla*, and set up here, with four Marble Statues, and a Fountain breaking out under its Base, by *Innocent X.*

6. THAT

• 6. THAT which stands by the Jesuits Church, and those in the Gardens of *Medicis* and *Mattho's* are of a smaller Size, and seem to be only the Tops of Obelisks broken off, but the Hieroglyphicks upon them, sufficiently demonstrate their Antiquity. Some are of Opinion, that the Hieroglyphicks on these Obelisks, relate the memorable Actions of the Egyptian Kings; others imagine they contain the Secrets of their Divinity, Astrology, Metaphysicks, Magick, and other Sciences that were cultivated by the *Egyptians*, but my Antiquarian told me that no Writer had as yet pretended to decypher them.

THE *Circi* or *Cirques*, were spacious Structures, of an oval or semicircular Figure, with large Areas, where the *Romans* run Races in Chariots, or on Horseback, round a *Meta* which stood in the Middle. There are only some Remains of that of *Antoninus Caracalla* without the Walls, and of the *Circus Maximus* the Form may just be discerned. Of the *Circus Agonalis*, now the *Piazza of Navona*; the *Circus* of *Nero* in the *Campo Vaticano*, and the *Circus Flaminius*, no Traces are left. The *Circus Maximus*, 'tis said, would contain an Hundred and sixty Thousand Spectators, who might sit conveniently in the three open Galleries; one of which was for the Senators, a second for the Gentlemen, and a third for the common People.

THERE

THERE were anciently eight Bridges over the *Tiber*, of which five are still left, viz. 1st, *Ponte di St. Angelo*, formerly called the *Pons Aelius*, near the Castle, on which are the Statues of *St. Peter* and *St. Paul*, and twelve Angels holding the Instruments of our Saviour's Passion. 2. *Ponte St. Bartolemeo*, anciently *Pons Cestius* or *Esquilinus*. 3. *Ponte Sisto*, heretofore *Aurelius Janiculensis*. 4. *Ponte di Santa Maria*, of old *Palatinus* and *Senatorius*. and 5. *Ponte de quattro Capi*, the ancient *Pons Turpeius* or *Fabricius*.

I shall not pretend to enter upon a particular Description of *St. Peter's Church*, which has been already done by so many Travellers, I shall only say, that it hath put all Antiquity to the Blush, and all Posterity to a *non plus*: That its several Parts are all incomparable Master-pieces: It's Pictures all Originals, and its Statues perfect Models; that the prime Architects of the World, have brought it at last to the Perfection in which we now see it; and in short, that the whole Church may be called the Quintessence of Art and Wealth, strained into a Religious Design of making a magnificent House to God in the Place where his Vicegerant upon Earth has his Residence.

I can not help lanching out in Praise of those publick Monuments of Charity in *Rome* the Hospitals, which are forty in
Number.

Number. Some for the old and infirm, others for Orphans, for Fools and Madmen, for Pilgrims, for Women unhappily married, for decayed Gentlemen, for lewd Women who have left their ill Courses, and a very large one for Infants exposed in the Streets by their wretched Parents. The chief Hospital is that of *St. Spirito* near the *Vatican* for exposed Infants, of which before great Numbers had been found in the Bottom of the *Tiber*. Besides Children, they receive here above a Thousand sick and infirm Persons; and have Apartments for poor Gentlemen, where they are treated in a better Manner than in common Hospitals. It is under the Government of a Cardinal, who has his Palace within the Walls of it. The Revenues of it amount to near Forty thousand Pounds yearly. As to the Foundling Children, their Parents, or any other Person for them, carry them to a back Wall of the Hospital, where a Place is made to receive them, and ringing a Bell, a Servant comes and takes the Child, asking no other Questions but whether it be baptized. The Boys are educated by Monks, and the Girls by Nuns, in different Apartments, and are provided for when they grow up.

EVERY Nation in *Europe* where the *Roman* Catholick Religion is professed, have their Hospitals for Pilgrims in this City; but this of the *Trinity* receives all indifferently; inso-much, that it hath lodged and fed at one Time Fifteen thousand Persons, besides their ordinary

ordinary Quota. The Manner of receiving and treating of the Pilgrims is thus: Every Evening those who are newly arrived present themselves before the Officers of the House, and producing their Certificates, are entered on the Register, each Person receiving a Medal or Ticket of his Admission; after this they are led into a large Room, where a Priest having read Prayers, washes all their Feet, and dresses such as are hurt with Travelling; after which they are brought into the Refectory, where having supped, they are shewn the common Dormitory, and each Man having his Bed assigned him, the Priest, after some short Exhortations and Prayers, leaves them to take their Rest.

WE were resolved to see every Thing in and about *Rome*, before we entered upon gay Life and Pleasures, when I say *see*, I mean to take a transient View of Things, for a whole Year would not suffice to inspect with any Exactness all the ancient and modern Architecture, Sculpture, and Paintings, that are to be met with here.

WE made an Excursion out of *Rome* for eight Days with our Antiquarian along with us, during which we visited *Tivoli*, *Frescati*, *Palestrina* and *Albano*. In our Way to *Tivoli*, we saw the Rivulet of *Salferata*, formerly called *Albula*, and smelt the Stench that arises from it's Waters some Time before we saw them.

THE little Lake that gives Rise to the River, with its floating Islands, is one of the most extraordinary natural Curiosities about *Rome*. It lies in the very Flat of *Campania*, and as it is the Drain of these Parts, it is no Wonder that it is so impregnated with Sulphur. We could not discover the least Traces of the *Sibyl's* Temple and Grave which stood on the Borders of this Lake. There is a most beautiful Prospect at a little Distance from the *Villa de Medecis*. It opens on one Side into the *Roman Campania*, where the Eye loses itself on a smooth spacious Plain. On the other Side is a more broken and interrupted Scene, made up of an infinite Variety of Inequalities and Shadowings that arise from an agreeable Mixture of Hills, Groves, and Vallies; but the most enlivening Part of all is the River *Teverone*, which you see at about a Quarter of a Mile's Distance, throwing itself down a Precipice, and falling by several Cascades from one Rock to another, till it gains the Bottom of the Valley, where the Sight of it would be quite lost, did it not sometimes discover itself through the Breaks and Openings of the Woods that grow about it. This River, after a very turbulent and noisy Course of several Miles among the Rocks and Mountains recovers at last, when in the Valley, its Temper, as it were, by little and little; and after many Turns and Windings glides peaceably into the *Tiber*. At *Frescati* we had the Satisfaction of seeing the first Sketch of *Versailles* in the Walks and Water-

Water-works. Our Antiquarian told us that the Prospect from it was much more delightful formerly when the *Campania* was set thick with Towns, Villas, and Plantations. *Cicero's Tusculum*, he told us, was at a Place called *Grotto Ferrate*, about two Miles off this Town, though most of the modern Writers have fixed it to *Frescati*. In going to this delicious Place we had a fair View of Mount *Algidio*.

ON our Way to *Palæstrina* we saw the Lake *Regilius*, famous for the Apparition of *Castor* and *Pollux*, who were here seen to give their Horses Drink after the Battle between the *Romans* and the Son-in-law of *Tarquin*. At some Distance from it we had a View of the *Lacus Gabinus* much larger than the former. We left the high Road for about Half a Mile to see the Sources of a modern Aqueduct, and it is curious to observe how the several little Springs and Rills, that break out of the Sides of the Mountain, are conveyed through little covered Channels, into the main Hollow of the Aqueduct. It was lucky for *Rome*, seeing it had Occasion for so many Aqueducts, that there chanced to be such a Range of Mountains in its Neighbourhood. For by this means they could take up their Water from what Height they pleased, without the Expence of such an Engine as that of *Marli*. Thus the *Claudian* Aqueduct run Thirty eight Miles, and sunk after the Proportion of five Foot and a Half

every Mile, by the Advantage only of a high Source, and the low Situation of *Rome*.

Palæstrina stands very high, like most other Towns in *Italy*, for the Advantage of the cool Breezes. *Statius*, said our Conductor, calls it *Prænestæ sacrum*, because of the famous Temple of Fortune that stood in it. There are still great Pillars of Granite, and other Fragments of this ancient Temple ; but the most considerable Remnant of it is a very beautiful *Mosaic* Pavement of Marble, in which we see the Figures of a Rhinoceros, of Elephants, and of several other Animals, with little Landships, which look very lively and well painted, though they are made out of the natural Colours and Shadows of the Marble.

IN our Excursion to *Albano* we went as far as *Nemi*, that takes its Name from the *Nemus Diana*. The Lake of *Nemi* lyes in a very deep Bottom, so surrounded on all Sides with Mountains and Groves, that the Surface of it is never ruffled with the least Breath of Wind, which, perhaps, together with the Clearness of its Waters, gave it formerly the Name of *Diana's* Looking-glass, which *Virgil's* *Speculumque Dianæ* confirms.

AT *Jensano* very near *Nemi* is the Palace of Prince *Cæsarini* in a pleasant Situation, and set off with many beautiful Walks. In our Return from *Jensano* to *Albano* we passed through

through *La Ricca*, the *Aricia* of the Ancients, which our Antiquarian told us was *Horace's* first Stage from *Rome* to *Brundisi*. There is nothing so remarkable as the Prospect from the *Capucin's* Garden, which for the Extent and Variety of pleasing Incidents, is the most beautiful Prospect in the World. It takes in the whole *Campania*, and terminates in a full View of the *Mediterranean*. You have a Sight at the same Time of the *Alban* Lake, which lies just by in an oval Figure, about seven Miles round, and by Reason of the continued Circuit of high Mountains that encompass it, looks like the Area of some vast Amphitheatre. This, together with the several green Hills and naked Rocks, within the Neighbourhood, makes the most agreeable Confusion imaginable.

THESE Places, said our Antiquarian, were all of them formerly the cool Retirements of the *Romans*, where they used to hide themselves among the Woods and Mountains, during the excessive Heats of their Summer, as *Bajæ* was the general Winter Rendezvous; upon which Occasion he repeated the following *Latin* Verses, with an *Italian* Translation by himself, but inferior to Mr. *Addison's*, which the Translator has subjoined.

*Jam terras volucremque polum fuga veris aquosi
Laxat, et fœcariis cœlum latratibus urit.*

Ardua jam densæ rarescunt mœnia Romæ :

Hos Præneste sacrum, nemus hos glaciale Dianæ,

*Algidus aut horrens, aut Tuscula protegit umbra,
Tiburæ hi Lucos, Anienique frigora captant.*

SIL. 4. 1.

All shun the raging Dog-star's sultry Heat,
And from the Half unpeopled Town retreat :
Some hid in *Nemi's* gloomy Forests lye,
To *Palestrina* some for Shelter fly ;
Others to catch the Breeze of breathing Air,
To *Tusculum* or *Algido* repair ;
Or in moist *Tivoli's* retirement find
A cooling Shade, and a refreshing Wind.

ON the contrary, at present, *Rome* is never fuller of Nobility than in Summer Time ; for the Country Towns are so infested with unwholesome Vapours, that they dare not trust themselves in them while the Heats last. There is no Question but the Air of the *Campania* would be now as healthful as it was formerly, were there as many Fires burning in it, and as many Inhabitants to manure the Soil.

AFTER our Return to *Rome* we dismissed our Antiquarian whom we paid very handsomely for his Attendance. Do not you think, my dear *Arabella* said I, that we have, if I may be allowed the Expression, had our Belly-ful of rambling and Conversation with Stocks and Stones, and that it is now high Time to shift the Scene, and dip a little into the Pleasures of *Rome*. The Ladies are handsome, and, if Fame speaks Truth, not at all
of

of cruel Dispositions ; I long to see the Billet-doux a-going again ; let us appear at the Operas and Assemblies, and my Life for it the *Chevalier de Montferan* will find that the *Roman Dames* are as little Proof against his Charms as other Folks ; for my own Part, continued I, as I can as little expect to make Conquests here as I did in other Places, and as I find, by sad Experience, that the Ladies will not make Love to me, I am resolved to be no longer an idle Spectator, and your Confident, but to act for myself, and at least to force one poor Heart to own me as Conqueror ; so good Chevalier lay your Account thus, that I am to be wholly taken up with my own Amours, and can give you no Assistance in yours ; and all this I said with such a serious Air, that *Arabella* laughed heartily at my Speech, and told me that such a noble Project was worthy the Chevalier *de Radpont* to whom she wished all imaginable Success ; but pray, Sir, added she, is it intirely consistent with Honour to engage a Lady's Heart meerly to satisfy a Whim ; for unless she can put up with pure *Platonick* Love, she will meet with bad Returns from such a Lover as your Worship. I know your Meaning, cried I, and at first I had some Scruples upon personating what I was so little qualified for ; but upon serious Reflection I got over them, and my Opinion is founded, I think, upon what amounts to a Demonstration. I believe you will allow that sensual Happiness consists chiefly in the Imagination ; suppose I make Love to a Lady who fancies
me

me to be a real Man, and finds herself disposed to gratify me and herself too, is she not happy in the agreeable Expectation of the imaginary Bliss? Every Moment of the Day and Night she is in Raptures upon the charming Prospect that the Imagination gives her of it, far superior to what she will find it really to be when it comes to a Trial, which is very often attended with Disappointment and Disgust: Now, by my Scheme, I propose to raise and warm a Woman's Imagination, without giving it any Occasion to cool, or her to find out that she has been deceived; so that for a considerable Time she enjoys the refined Pleasure of expected Happiness, and is only deprived at last of the dull brutal Conclusion, of which the Disappointment bears no Proportion to the long Tract of imaginary Felicity that she has so lusciously enjoyed; and from the Whole I conclude, that were it not for propagating the Species, I would cut out real Enjoyment as a Thing that brings us upon a Level with the Brutes. Your Philosophy is new, cried *Arabella* laughing, but I am afraid you will find few Ladies here who will relish your imaginary System of Love, for though you may carry on the Delusion for some Time, what a terrible Resentment must attend your trifling, when Things are brought to a certain Point; when once a Woman is resolved to sacrifice her Honour and Virtue, nothing will make her so mad as to find a Lover dilatory, she Turns furious and breaths nothing but Revenge and Death; so my dear *Alithea*, let me advise you very seriously to
abandon

abandon such dangerous Whims. In some Parts of the World a Woman thus disappointed would, perhaps, think of no other Revenge but to despise the Man's Stupidity who neglected the golden Opportunity, but here the Case is quite different, and a Woman who has met with such a Balk, will form a thousand Schemes one after another to be revenged, and will accomplish it some how or other, unless a Man leaves the Country, and even in that Case we have Instances of Women's having hired Ruffians to go and commit Murder, so that I should be under a continual Dread for your Life wherever we went, though you should happen to get clear off here, which it is ten to one if you do ; therefore, for my Satisfaction, if you have no Regard to your own Safety, drop such mad Projects. The last Part of your Speech has quite disarmed me, said I, for though I am under no Dread or Terror for my own Person from the Dangers which you have been representing, yet rather than give you the least Uneasiness I will abandon all my Projects of Gallantry ; that is, I will take care not to embark myself so far in any particular Intrigue, but that I may retire without fearing Daggers or Poison. You know, my dear *Arabella*, that the general Notion that People have of us *Frenchmen*, is that we make Love as we take Snuff, purely from Habit without Thought, and few Women who have any Notion of the *French politesse* will lay any Stress upon our amorous Protestations ; they know that it is a Maxim of Gallantry among us to say
tender

tender soft Things to every Woman that falls in our Way, and look upon all our pretty Speeches as meer Words of Course, which enter at one Ear and go out at the other, leaving no Impression behind ; so that a Woman of Wit, knowing our Characters, will answer us in our own Terms, and be just as void of Sincerity as she knows we are ; but if I should happen to light upon any vain silly Female who seems to swallow the Bait, I'll make it my Business that Moment to let her know, that what I said was only to pass away the Time, according to the established Custom in *France* ; by this Means I shall prevent serious Engagements, and shall have the Pleasure of diverting myself. But we are losing Time here, in discoursing upon imaginary Fears, let us go to our Toilets and dress ourselves out in the gayest Manner, that we may appear to Advantage this Evening at the Princess *Borgese's* Assembly, where I expect my dear *Arabella* will make some poor Hearts ache : Still on the old Strain, *Alithea*, but if your Prophetick Spirit should happen to be right, I am so terrified at the *Italian* Genius, that I will neither write nor speak in the Lover's Stile while I remain at *Rome* ; and if it happens that any of them are so silly, or rather so impudent, as to write Billet-doux, I will absolutely leave the Place.

THE Princess *Borgese* had been in her Youth one of the finest Women in *Europe*, and though she was fond of Company and Diversions, yet her greatest Enemies could throw

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 107

throw no Blemish upon her Reputation. We were presented by the *French* Embassador, with whom we went to the Assembly, and were very graciously received by that Lady, and several other Persons of Distinction who were there. I happened to sit next to a Lady in Widow's Weeds, who was young and handsome, and seemed not to be over-loaded with Grief; and being resolved to know whether I judged right or wrong, I attacked her in the following odd Manner. Madam, said I, you will, no doubt, think it a very odd Compliment, from a Man you never saw before, to congratulate you upon your Dress, without knowing how far you are affected by your Loss; but if one can judge of the Heart by the Eyes, the Brightness of yours would persuade me that the Wound is not deep, and I think the Men must be very blind if they do not force you to alter your Dress; for my Part, continued I, till now the Sight of Weeds inspired me with melancholy Thoughts of Mortality, and which is very odd, upon seeing you, I have no Thoughts but of Matrimony. As Matrimony, Sir, answered she, is reckoned in this Country a Sort of Death, I do not see that you have really changed your Thoughts, or if there be any Change it is for the worse, for what Thoughts are more becoming a Christian or more strongly recommended to us than those on Mortality, which naturally lead us to despise the Enjoyments of Life, among which Matrimony may be classed; for my part, added she, though I have no Reason to be greatly

greatly afflicted with the Loss which occasions my being in this mournful Livery, yet as it puts me often in mind of my own Mortality, and weans me by Degrees from the unsatisfactory Enjoyments of Life, I believe I shall not easily be persuaded to throw it off. Such Self-denial, Madam, replied I, would be proper enough for a Nun, who, debarred from the principal Enjoyments of Life, is to mind nothing but her Latter-end; but for a Lady of your Youth and Beauty, and so full of Life, methinks it is rendering useless what God and Nature would not have made so perfect to remain in a State of Inutility. If you have not met with that Satisfaction in the matrimonial Embraces, which you perhaps expected, you ought not from thence to reject all sensual Enjoyments; love but the Man whom you take into your Bed, and I'll warrant you'll forget your Mortality.

ONE would be apt to judge, Sir, from the Warmth with which you espouse the Cause of Matrimony, that you are either actually happy in it, or that you expect great Things from it, and I own, that Men, (as their carnal Inclinations are more rampant than Women's, and that they can indulge them, without being subjected to the Hardships that we must undergo,) may find it a great Conveniency to have a Wife to answer their Demands, but you must give me Leave, Sir, still to be of this Opinion, that the Satisfaction we have in a married State, bears no Proportion to the shameful Drudgeries
to

to which we are subjected, and to which, I never will submit, if I continue in the same Sentiments. Such a lovely angelical Frame as yours Madam, said I, cannot long harbour such cruel and unnatural Sentiments; there's something sweet and tender in your Eyes, of which the Source lies deep in your Heart, and some happy he, or other, will at last find out the Spring, and force it into the Channels of Love. Some Ladies coming up to us, she had only Time to tell me, that at our next Meeting we should finish the Dispute, and I hope Madam, said I, your Conversion. While I was fighting with the fair Widow, my Friend *Arabella* was closely engaged in Conversation with a young Lady of the *Ottoboni* Family, who had no Aversion to Matrimony, and could have been easily tempted to commit it with my Friend, had she found the *Chevalier de Montferan* disposed to come under any such Engagements, but by their Conversation, which *Arabella* recounted when we were by ourselves, I found that she and I had been acting quite opposite Parts as well as the two Ladies, but the Cream of the Jest was, that next Day I had a Letter from my Widow confessing that my Arguments had altered her Sentiments upon Matrimony, and *Arabella's* fair Lady wrote the *Chevalier de Montferan*, that having seriously reflected on what had passed between them, she plainly now saw that she had taken the wrong Side of the Question, and that she never more would espouse the Cause of Matrimony. The

110 *The TRAVELS of*

Copies of both the Letters I here subjoin with our Answers.



To the Chevalier DE RADPONT.

I Thought the Natives of *Rome* were only capable of working Miracles, but I now find my Mistake, and that a *Frenchman* has done in Half an Hour what the Pope and all his Cardinals could not have brought about in an Age, I mean, Sir, reconciling me so well to Matrimony (to which I was a declared Enemy) that I believe an agreeable Man would tempt me to tie the Knot once more. I am to be at the Opera this Evening, where I should be glad to have your Advice about the Choice of a Husband, now that I am in the Humour of having one. How-comical would it be should you, by a second Miracle, make me imagine you to be a Man fit for the Purpose of

Margarita di Filastro.

My Friend and I resolved to pretend a Conversion as well as the Ladies, that our Sentiments and theirs might still clash ; and agreeable to this Resolution I wrote what follows.

To



To Madam DI FILASTRO.

THOUGH I thought Miracles were altogether ceased, yet I am the more ready to believe that which your Letter mentions, as I find a miraculous Change in myself from your Arguments against Matrimony, which now appears to me in so monstrous a Light that I believe I shall never enter into that State myself, nor recommend it, as formerly, to any other; and this being my present Case, you will easily judge how unfit I am to chuse a Husband, or to be one myself; so that if I come to the Opera, it will be to combat your new Sentiments, and to express my Concern at your unhappy Change, the rather that you attribute it to the Persuasion of the unfortunate

Chevalier de Radpont.

Arabella's Fair wrote in the following Terms.



To the Chevalier DE MONTFERAN.

Sign. Illust.

I Have seriously reflected on your terrible Picture of Matrimony, and I begin to think that the Happiness of that State bears no

Proportion to the Cares and Inconveniencies that certainly attend it, not to mention worse that very possibly may happen from Causes which we neither foresaw nor can prevent. One Half Hour of your Rhetorick will complete my Conversion, and the next Assembly Night will afford you an Opportunity, if you think proper, to give it the finishing Stroke, which will highly oblige

Maria Guicciardino.



Arabella's Answer to the above.

ALAS! Madam, what Task do you impose upon me! I am no longer what I was, but a Creature who abhors his former audicious Opinion of Matrimony, who is ready to make his Recantation, and to ask Forgiveness of the Fair Sex. What a terrible Sting will it ever be in my Conscience, if my pernicious Tongue has prevailed upon you to abandon your first and noble Principles, that heavy Load of Guilt will accompany me to my Grave, if my Endeavours to bring you back to your former Sentiments prove ineffectual. Doubt not but that I will be at the Assembly, where I will not only use my best Endeavours to destroy my former wicked Arguments, but propose an Expedient, by which you and I both may be convinced that
we

we cannot have any real Pleasure in Life, equal to what the married State affords. If the bare Thoughts of the Expedient are Raptures, what extatick Bliss must be in the Execution ; but if it should miscarry, what must be the wretched Fate of the

Chevalier de Montferan.

BUT pray tell me, my dear *Arabella*, said I, after I had read this Letter, what noble Expedient is this that you propose ? I suppose you intend to make an Offer of yourself to her ; and if she should accept, which I am apt to believe she will, what Expedient will you then fall upon to get out of the Scrape ? I dare say, your *Maria* and my *Margarita* are both matrimonially disposed, my Mistress you see owns it, and yours, I believe, will change once more when she finds you not only reconciled to Matrimony, but ready to commit it with her Ladyship ; for after what you have wrote, you cannot, I think, in honour get off without offering to take a Leap in the dark with her ; and it is surprizing to me that the Thoughts of Daggers and Poison did not stop your Pen ; for if this fair Lady, who I am very certain loves you, should be converted once more, and you not to push your Point, can you expect any thing but the Effects of a terrible Revenge ; believe me the only safe Way for you will be to pack up and begone. I own, said she, that all the Dangers you mention did not occur to me, but though they had I should not have wrote otherwise, for I am not at all afraid of

this Lady's revengeful Disposition, and my Reason is, I have observed so much Sweetness in her Temper and Disposition, that I dare say it is not in her Power to do a cruel or barbarous thing, and what I dread more than any personal Danger is, that by my carrying on the Cheat this poor Lady may be so far engaged, that a Disappointment will make her, perhaps, unhappy, and I should think it a monstrous Injustice in me to gratify my Whim at the Expece of her Tranquillity ; but after all I hope your Fears and mine are imaginary Fantoms, this Lady's Vanity will at least make her keep up to her new Opinion for some Time, were it nothing but for the sake of Decorum, and not to give me an Opportunity of flattering myself that I could make her turn and veer at Pleasure, and tho' I will confess that her Merit has brought about this extraordinary Change upon me, yet a fatal Obstacle, tho' my Person were agreeable to her, prevents my aspiring to her Possession ; and pray my dear, cried I, what is this fatal Obstacle, sure there can be none other but your Sex, and I hope you will not let her into that Secret ; and why not, said she, if I find nothing else will do. Why then, replied I, to prevent her having a bad Opinion of your Virtue my Secret must out too, and then *Maria* and *Margarita* will whisper it about among their Friends, and we shall become in a very little Time the whole Town-talk : the only Favour I beg of you is to let me know some Hours before you make this noble Effort, that I may prepare for my Journey,

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 115

Journey, for I swear I'll not continue Half an Hour after it in *Rome*. Come my dear *Alithea*, said she, don't be in a Passion, I will try many Expedients, and this is only a Resource at the last Extremity, but if I should happen to find that *Maria's* Cure depends upon that Discovery would it not be cruel to deny it? Ay, ay, cried I, you are as little capable of being a Husband as she is of being a Pope, and it would be cruel, I own, to flatter the Girl with vain Hopes, if you know her to be of an amorous Disposition, but if you can bring yourself off without discovering our Secret, pray do it. But let me ask you, said she, a civil Question in my Turn. Should your beautiful Widow make such Advances (which I think she is in a fair Way of doing) that you must plainly see she has a Plot upon you, how will you behave? If you pretend not to understand her, have you not just Reason to dread the Effects of her Resentment? No, no, said I, I will represent Matrimony in such black and dismal Colours that if I do not bring her to think of it as she did before, I shall, at least, draw such a lively Picture of my Aversion now to it, that she will think it quite needless to form any Schemes against my Liberty; and therefore, the Part I have to act, my dear *Arabella*, is very different from yours. I am hopeful, said she, we shall both come off with Honour, but if we should not, will not all the Misfortunes that ensue be owing to that unaccountable Whim of yours, of dabbling in Amours and Gallantry. But, my dear *Arabella*,

bella, replied I, can you charge me with having advised you to write, or to tell a Lady that you love Matrimony ; for by doing this, if she tells you that she does so too, you ought as a Man to take the Hint and push your Point, and to be sure you'll make her very angry if you do not, so blame yourself not me if your Indiscretion has led you into a Labyrinth, out of which you cannot easily extricate yourself. Well, well, cried she, I must do my best, and the worst that can happen is our leaving *Rome* sooner than we designed.

WE went to the Opera, where both our Mistresses were in different Boxes ; I went directly to my Widow, who blushed a little when I was making my Bows to her. Whether am I to look upon you, Sir, said she, as a Friend or an Enemy, as a Man who comes to approve or disapprove of my Change ? If your Change, Madam, said I, be such as your Billet represents, I must own that I have the Misfortune to differ from you ; but if it be true that my Arguments contributed to make you change your Opinion, I can now, from a clear Conviction of my former Error, demonstrate, I think, the Truth of my new Opinion, and I should be very fond of an Opportunity in a more proper Place than this to let you know the Reasons which have made me an Enemy to Matrimony. Very well, said she, though it is ridiculous enough in a Woman to give a Man an Assignment who

who will neither do nor let do, yet a certain Curiosity to hear those mighty Reasons which have wrought such a Change upon you, will tempt me to give you a proper Opportunity ere long, and if your Arguments are as prevalent on this Side of the Question as they were on the other, I do not know but I may turn to my old way of thinking; but I make this a Condition, that if after all you can say I persist in my present way of thinking, you shall in that case be obliged to assist me in chusing out a Husband. I may well wish you a good one, Madam, but am by no means fit to give Directions; for, besides that I am a Stranger and unacquainted with Men that might pretend to make their Addresses to such a Lady as you, the Person that I should, perhaps, think the most deserving would appear quite otherwise in your Eyes; and therefore, since you are resolved to play the Fool and marry, consult your own Heart, and then you'll have no body but yourself to blame, if you are deceived in your Expectations. But if I should name the Man, said she, will you not do me all the good Offices with him that you can, if he is one whom I esteem, Madam, you must excuse me, for I never will advise my Friend to do a Thing which I think will make him miserable, and if he is a Stranger I have no Right to advise him. Since you can do nothing, said she in a Pet, but to dissuade me from a Thing which I have a mind to do, I will have no more Conversation with you upon the Subject, and I desire you will give me back the Billet which

which I sent you, if you have it about you, or tell me what Hour I may send for it To-morrow Morning. Here it is, Madam, said I presenting it, and I wish you Joy of your new Scheme, and I you of your Stupidity, said she, in not knowing how to make a better Use of a good Fortune when it falls in your Way, and then made me a Sign with her Hand to leave her, which I did, very glad that no worse had happened.

WHEN we were got home, let us now compare Notes, my dear *Arabella*, said I, and we shall see which of us has come off best; for my part, I can tell you that it is all over with the Widow and me, and we have taken a formal Leave; she intends to jump into Matrimony with the first Man I believe that offers, and I am very glad; but how stands the Case with you and your beautiful *Maria*? Just the Reverse of yours and the Widow, said she, the more I converse with that lovely Maid the greater my Esteem for her is, her good Sense, Modesty, and Sweetness of Temper charm me, and next to yourself, my dear *Alithea*, I know no Woman that I would sooner contract a Friendship with; you might have observed, added she, that the Moment I perceived her at the Opera I went to her Box, where after a little general Conversation two other Ladies who were with her falling into Discourse between themselves, seemed to be so much taken up with it, that we could say what we pleased without being observed by them. What Opinion will you have of me,
Sir,

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 119

Sir, said she, in a low Voice, for the Liberty I used with a Gentleman so much a Stranger to me as you are? Your Presence ought to put me to the Blush, and I should scarce forgive myself for such a rash Step, did I not flatter myself that you will attribute it to the real Motive, *to wit*, Gratitude, which I thought due to my Converter, but, added she, smiling, I am sorry to find that instead of finishing the Work he resolves to destroy all that he has done, and to reduce me to a worse State than what I was in before. After what I have wrote, answered I, it would be presumptuous to deny the Change of my Sentiments; but cannot you guess, Madam, what has occasioned this strange Revolution? No truly, Sir, and I should be glad to know it. I could not, said I, have taken a more effectual Way of rendering myself miserable than by endeavouring to inspire you with an Aversion to what I now find is only capable of making me happy. But is it not possible, said she, that what constitutes your Happiness may have a very contrary Effect with respect to me, and may it not be looked upon as something ungenerous and even selfish in you, to measure a Woman's Happiness by your own, when you cannot but be sensible that in Matrimony what the Men reckon the Happiness of that State is the very thing that renders it insupportable to the Female Sex, and this Curse entailed upon them from the Beginning of the World, has its Execution upon every Woman the Moment she commences Wife, and what is still an Addition to our Misery,
Nature

Nature has given us a Propensity which very often gets the better of our Reason, and all the dreadful Prospect that lyes open to our View. But since I have, by the Clearness and Evidence of your Arguments, got so far over the *Foible* of my Sex, as to preserve myself from the dreadful Gulf, can you be so cruel as to precipitate me headlong again into it without any other Motive but to gratify your Vanity. The Success of my first Attempt gave me, I own said I, some Vanity, and, to speak sincerely, was perhaps the principal Motive of it ; but something much nearer my Heart prompts me to a second ; and if the only Expedient I have to propose proves unsuccessful, I shall reckon myself the most unhappy Man upon Earth. In that Case, Sir, said she hastily, the best Way is not to put your Happiness upon the Chance of an uncertain Expedient ; but, replied I in a melancholy Tone, my unhappy Situation is such that I languish to know what, perhaps, will make me miserable : My Case, in short, Madam, is this ---- no Particularities, interrupted she, for my Case is just now what I could wish it, without Disquiet, without Trouble, and were I to know yours, it would make me uneasy to think that I could do you no Service ; so let us both remain as we now are, lest worse should happen upon a more particular Explication. She then pulled the Lady that was next her by the Sleeve, and told her laughing, pardon me if I interrupt your Conversation, but you have been so long in close Engagement, that I believe it
is

is now Time to take a Breathing. Had I imagined that you was not agreeably entertained by that Gentleman, said the Lady, my Friend and I would have deferred talking on a private Affair till another Opportunity offered, but I have so favourable an Opinion of the Gentleman's Capacity of entertaining a fine Lady agreeably, that I thought we might without being guilty of ill Manners, have a little private Chat together. Your Opinion of the Gentleman's Abilities, said the dear *Maria* is very favourable, and were it not committing a Crime against that Reserve by which a young Woman ought to be guided, I should be tempted to add the Word *just*; yet as our Conversation could only turn upon general Topicks, after we had said all that occurs in such Cases, we were like to dwindle into Silence, and to prevent that I was obliged to interrupt you and your Friend, for which I hope you'll excuse me. Whether your favourable Opinion of me Ladies be real or only Compliment, I think myself obliged to return you Thanks, and yet I must take the Liberty to say that it was this fair Lady's Fault that her Conversation and mine did not continue longer, and I cannot hinder myself from charging her with Interruption just at the very Time when something that nearly concerned me was to have been brought upon the Carpet, and I hope, Ladies, you will use your Interest with her to grant me another Opportunity of discussing the Subject we were upon. You have no Occasion, Sir, said she, to have Recourse to the Interest of

these Ladies for what my own Curiosity would prevail with me to grant, were I not persuaded that what remains can be nothing new, nor can possibly bring me to alter my Opinion, for you no doubt know that we Women are head-strong Sort of Creatures, and will not be beat out of our Whims by Persuasion or Dint of Reason; so that should we renew the Dispute, it is ten to one but you would find me more obstinate than before, and we had better make a drawn Battle of it, than to fatigue ourselves to no Purpose. I am not so disheartned, Madam, said I, but that I could enter the Lists a second Time, not without Hopes of Conquest from the Justice of my Cause, and if you decline the Combat what Opinion must I have of your Courage? It is rather Timerity than true Courage, replied she, to throw one's self into the Way of Danger, where neither Honour nor Duty calls, a prudent Caution and even Retreat in our Sex is as honourable as a bold and daring Attack in yours, and I think you are indebted to my Discretion that exempts you from the Shame of a Miscarriage, which must inevitably be your Fate; so that all Things considered you had better trust to Time and the Woman's fickle Disposition, the mighty Work of my Conversion, than to your own Prowess. I shall obey your Commands harsh as they are, said I, without murmuring, but against my unhappy converting Genius which succeeded so well on the wrong Side of the Question, to which she made no Reply; and I retired observing that the
Ladies

Ladies who were with her, by their Attention to our mystical Dialogue, would have certainly pressed me to an Explanation, had I remained longer with them,

Now, my dear *Alithea*, what do you think of *Maria*? Why, I think she is a very witty Girl, and would make a very pretty Mistress, and do not you think she would make a very charming Wife? Sure you do not imagine, said I laughing, that I have already forgotten my Antimatrimonial System; but tell me seriously, you whimsical waggish Creature, said *Arabella*, if this Girl would not tempt you if you were a Man, I am sure she would me, for I think she possesses every thing that would make a Man happy. Very well, said I, *Maria* is to have *Alithea*'s Place in your Heart, and poor *Alithea* is no more *Arabella*'s dearest Friend, in pronouncing these Words, I put on so grave an Air that she really thought me serious, and was so affected that the Tear came in her Eye, she clasped me in her Arms, and said in a languishing Tone, how cruel are you, my dear *Alithea*, to touch me in so sensible a Part, Heaven knows that no Woman upon Earth can rival you in my Affection and Esteem, and had I thought that you would have put any such Construction on the Praises which I bestowed upon *Maria*, I would not have mentioned her Name. I am as jealous of you, said I, as a Man could be of his Mistress, and were you to get a Husband, I believe I should have Difficulty enough to keep my Temper. I

don't think you will ever be put to any Trial that Way, replied she, if I continue to think of Marriage as I now do ; but if in the Sequel I should alter my Opinion, I promise you that I never will marry without your Consent, and it would be very agreeable to me if you could come under the same Engagement ; touch Hands, my dearest *Arabella*, and let us jointly make this Vow by way of Prayer, that if ever we take unto us Husbands without consulting one another, may Heaven plague us with strong Desires and Husbands that cannot satisfy them. Amen, and Amen, with all my Soul, said she.

DURING our Stay at *Rome*, we set a-part one Day of the Week for Conversation with Men of Learning and Piety, particularly with Father *Angelo* a Jesuit, who knew the World and Men as well as Books, and with whom we were very intimate ; he was a Favourite of the Cardinal *Ottoboni's*, and told us many Instances of his Generosity and Grandeur of Soul ; and though he was not without Suspicion of Gallantry, his Intrigues were only whispered, and his Charities loudly proclaimed through *Rome*. His House was the only one of all the Cardinals which was open to Strangers, and where they were magnificently entertained. Though his Revenues were large, yet his Generosity exceeded them ; and our Jesuit told us, that the Multiplicity and Extensiveness of his Charities, had greatly involved him. When we were introduced to him he gave us a general

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 125

neral Invitation, and told us in a noble frank Manner, that he expected we would make free with his House and Table, the oftner the welcomer. *Arabella* answered his Compliment, by assuring him that we would look upon it as a particular Happiness to have the Honour of his Protection while at *Rome*, and that we would by our Presence often put him in mind of us. His Eminence told us, that he was a Lover of Music, and had an Opera performed once a Week at his Palace, where you shall be welcome, Gentlemen, if *Italian* Music, which differs from what you have in *France*, can divert you. I can assure your Eminence, said I, that I think the *Italian* Music infinitely preferable to the *French*, and I hope, by degrees, it will gain Credit in *France*, and entirely banish the old *French* Goust, which indeed is preferable to the *Italian* in this, that every Shopkeeper in the Pit sings as fast as the Actor on the Stage, and very often as well; and I think our Nation cannot be called fickle with respect to Music, though they may justly deserve that Character in other Things, and had it not been for a *Lully*, Music would have been handed down in *France* from Father to Son as entailed Estates. The Cardinal laughed at my Simile, and told me, that if I loved Novelty in Music, I could go no where to be better fitted than in *Italy*.

WE spent the Remainder of the Winter most agreeably at *Rome*, where we had many little Love Adventures, and got acquainted

with so many of the prime Nobility, that were they as penetrable as other People, I might have adventured to give their Characters, but they are so deeply hidden in Mystery and Politics, that they are very far past my finding out ; and he that judges of them by outward Behaviour and Appearance, will find himself terribly mistaken : Thus the the Court of *Rome* may be called the Quintessence of Politics and Religion ; they go hand in hand, and contribute not a little to support each other ; for he that is a refined Politician will certainly find it his Interest to appear zealous in the Cause of Religion ; by this means he gains such a Reputation, and the People are so prepossessed in his Favour, that though some may have Penetration enough to see through the Cheat, yet should they attempt to expose it, it is odds but the public Prejudice may not only bear him up against Truth and Evidence, displayed in the clearest Light, but expose his Accusers to all the Insults of a desperate and giddy Mob.

WE left *Rome* the 22d of *March* 1729, and took the Road to *Florence*, passing thro' *Ronciglione Monteroso*, *Viterbo*, *Montefiascone*, *Bolsena Aquapendente*, *Viterbo*, from whence we passed the Mountain *Rodesocani* on the Road to *Sienna*, and arrived at *Florence* on the 25th before Sun-set. It makes a very handsome Appearance at a Distance being situated in a beautiful Valley between Hills which rise insensibly, and end at Length in
high

high Mountains, inhabited in such a Manner that they may be reckoned the Suburbs of *Florence*. The River *Arno* divides it in two Parts, which have a Communication by four Bridges of which two are admired for their Structure. There are a great many Statues and Fountains in the Streets, and we may meet with agreeable Objects which way soever we turn our Eyes. Their private Buildings are lofty, their Palaces numerous and exquisitely contrived, their Churches but little inferior to those of *Rome*, and no less than seventeen spacious Squares, so that the Title of *Florence the Fair* is justly bestowed upon it. Some Travellers, however, think it defective in two Things, the first that they have no Glafs in their Windows, but their finest Palaces are often disgraced with tatter'd Paper; and in the second Place, the Streets and Courts in their Palaces are too narrow for the Loftiness of their Buildings, which are Objections made to many other Towns; and the only Answer we meet with is, that neither Glafs nor wide Streets are convenient in so warm a Climate. As it is, one Side of the Street always casts a Shade upon the other; and by their Paper Windows they avoid the scorching Heat of the Sun, whose Rays would be contracted and heightened by Glafs.

As *Tuscan* Pillars and rustick Work owe their Original to this Country, the Architect always takes Care to give them a Place in the great Edifices that are raised in *Tuscany*;

cany ; though the *Dorick*, the *Ionick*, and *Corinthian* Orders are not excluded. The Duke's new Palace, called the Palace of *Pitti* is built *a la maniera rustica*, as the *Italians* call it, which is, where great rough Stones are set jutting out beyond the plain Superficies.

THERE have been so many exact and full Descriptions published of the Palace, with all the Curiosities of the famous Gallery, that I shall not enter upon the Detail of what we took eight Days to see, and might have very well employed a Month in viewing what is to be seen in this delicious Place. Of an Hundred and fifty Collegiate and Parochial Churches and Chapels, that of *St. Laurence* adjoining to the Collegiate Church is the most magnificent ; and I am so charmed with the Thoughts of it, that I cannot hinder myself from telling what I saw in it, though, perhaps, what I relate will be no new Thing to some Readers.

THE Chappel of *St Laurence* is the *Mausoleum* of the *Medicean* Family, and universally allowed to be the finest Edifice of the Kind in the World. It is of an Octogonal Figure vaulted on the Top in Form of a Cupola, the Walls incrusted and covered with Porphyry, Jasper, Agate, Touch-stone, Lapis Lazuli, Oriental Alabaster, and other rich Materials that can be equalled by nothing but the Workmanship, which sets it beyond all Parallel : Round the Chapel are
the

the Tombs of the great Dukes, composed of Porphyry, Oriental Granite, and the most precious Kinds of Marble; on each Tomb is a great Pillar of Jasper, enriched with various Sorts of Jewels, and on each Pillar a ducal Crown, which is still a great deal richer: In the Middle of each Face of the Octogon rises a double Pilaster of Jasper, with a double Chapter of Brass gilt, the Base being of the same Metal. On the Pedestal of each Pilaster are several Emblematical Figures, composed of precious Stones, joined together with all the Art imaginable; over the Tombs are the Statues of the great Dukes at full Length, all of Brass gilt, and placed in Niches round the Chapel. In a Word, on which Side soever we cast our Eyes, we are amazed; if we view the Walls, our Eyes are dazzled with the piercing Lustre of the precious Stones; if we look up, we are ravished with the beauty of the Roof, vaulted with Lapis Lazuli, the brightest Blue, and intermixed with Stars and Veins of Gold, which represent the Face of Heaven very naturally. This Work has been already above an Hundred Years begun, wherein immense Sums have been expended, and still it remains unfinished. The great Altar, whose Riches and Workmanship is equal to such a Chapel, is not yet set up, but kept still in the great Dukes Jewel Office. The Chrystal Pillars of this Altar, are a full Ell long, and finely wrought, having Chapters of pure Gold: The Pictures

tures composed of inlaid precious Stones which form the Antependium of the Altar: The neat Contexture of others of different Colours and Lustre; with the Variety of rich Cameo's, which are set here and there, render the Beauty of it inexpressible: And among the Statues designed to adorn this Chapel, there is one of the Virgin, made by *Michael Angelo*, which represents her Grief at the Passion of her blessed Son, and hath the most Life in it of all the Statues I ever saw.

WE were introduced to the grand Duke, by the *Marquis de Grimoalti* a Gentleman of the Bed-Chamber, to whom we brought a Letter of Recommendation, from no less Man than the Cardinal *Ottoboni*, which he gave us sealed, when we went to receive his Commands, telling us that he had none other but to wish us a good Journey, and to beg we would deliver this Letter when we reached *Florence*, and you may believe we were surprized when we saw that it contained nothing but a Recommendation in our Favour, and that the *Marquis* would introduce us at Court, and make us pass the Time we remained at *Florence*, as agreeably as possible. We begged when he wrote to his Eminence, that he would assure him of our profound Respect, and return him our most humble Thanks for his undeserved Favour; Gentlemen, said the *Marquis*, those who know this great Man are not surprized at his acting in this Manner, he has such

a peculiar Nobleness in obliging, that the Manner of granting a Favour augments the Value of it, and what crowns all, he most frequently obliges those he esteems without being asked. You may believe, Gentlemen, added he, that upon this Recommendation, joined to your own Merit, nothing shall be wanting in my Power to divert you here: I will now go and notify your Arrival to his Royal Highness, and receive his Commands for your Audience. We were introduced at 5 o' Clock that Afternoon into the Duke's Closet, who did us the Honour to entertain us for above a Quarter of an Hour, and before we withdrew told us that he should be glad to see us often at Court during our Stay at *Florence*. That Evening we were invited to Supper at the Marquis *Grimoaldi's*, whose Lady was a most beautiful Woman and full of Wit. We were a numerous mixed Company of Men and Women, and after Supper we danced, which *Arabella* did so gracefully, that this with her other Charms set two or three of the Ladies agog, and, without Vanity, I had at least my Share in the Applauses that the Company were pleased to bestow upon our dancing. After I had danced a Minuet with a beautiful young Lady, Spouse to the Count *de Rinalto*, and led her to her Place, finding an empty Chair by her's I placed myself without Ceremony in it, and we had for some Moments a Conversation full of Life and Wit, which she began in this Manner.

I think *Grimoalti*, said she, cannot be of that jealous Disposition which some Folks in this Court are pleased to ascribe to him, otherwise he would not, without very powerful Reasons, have admitted two such Cavaliers as your Friend and you into his House, and to tell the Truth, I think our Husbands are not very wise to throw such Temptations in our Way, though they may have a very good Opinion of our Virtue. I do not doubt, Madam, but they have the Opinion of your Virtue which it deserves, and if we join to that their own Merit far superior to ours, it would be very surprising to me if they should be affected with any such Distemper. It is every Man of Gallantry's Business, and I believe their common Practice, said she, to exclaim against Jealousy in Husbands, at least to their Wives, who by that Means may be wrought up to a higher Pitch of Indignation, the natural Consequence of which is Resentment and Revenge, and this with the Help of a pretty Fellow and a favourable Opportunity might come to plant Horns where they never were before. This strange and loose Way of talking made me conclude that I had got into the Hands of a downright Coquette, for which Reason I resolved to push the Conversation so far as that I should certainly know how her Pulse beat. I do not know, Madam, replied I, affecting a passionate Glance, but that if you were under the Tyranny of a jealous Husband, and I a pretty
Fellow

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 133

Fellow that could skrew up your Indignation to the necessary Pitch, I should with great Joy become the Instrument of your Revenge. Very well said she, you may perhaps be put to a Tryal, when you can convince me that a *Frenchman* is capable of concealing the Favours which he receives from Ladies. Indiscretion, Madam, replied I, is a Crime too common indeed in *France*, but in *Italy*, a *Frenchman* will keep a Secret for his own Sake, if he does it not for the Lady's, so that if there lyes no other Bar between me and Happiness, it is quite needless to put any Delays to the Accomplishment of your Revenge ; no Precipitation said she, *qui va piano va sano*, which I take to be the same thing with your *aller bride en main* i. e. *to make no more Hasten than good Speed* ; Preliminaries must be settled and ratified before I deliver up the Fort, and then *Vogue la Galère*, or, *happy be lucky, let the World go how it will*. May we not just now settle these Preliminaries, said I, just now, answered she, I find you are unacquainted with our Manner of intrigueing, the Articles will at least fill up fifty Sheets of Paper, and must be extended by a *Notary Public* in due Form. I have heard of Marriage Contracts by *Notary Publics*, replied I, but never till now imagined that they were to be made privy to an Intrigue. A Woman, said she, must be a very great Fool indeed who does not take the necessary Precautions against Accidents, that may very probably bring her Amours not only to her Husband's Knowledge, but expose

her to public Censure, and if this should happen to be the Case, would she not be a very silly Idiot to have nothing to depend on but the Generosity of a Lover, who, perhaps, in a Week, if he could stand out so long, would be quite cloy'd ; the least she could expect from an injured Husband would be to be turned off with Disgrace, and without a separate Maintenance ; so that there must be an Article of Provision in that Case, and the Yearly Allowance secured in the strongest Manner : I mean by Bonds of substantial Men here or at *Rome* ; and without all this can be complied with, and many more Articles of good Behaviour, we must drop the Treaty. I believe it must be so, Madam, said I, for such Contracts would make the thing look so like Matrimony, I should never be able to go through with it, and if your Favours are not to be purchased at any other Rate, I renounce all Pretensions to them. *Tauca*, *Tauca*, cried she holding out her Hand, had you accepted the Treaty I should have concluded you to be either a Fool or a Knave, and equally despised you in both Cases : I have been often told, added she, that a *Frenchman* made no more of debauching a married Woman than of taking a Pinch of Snuff, and I had a mind to divert myself a little with you, but since I find that you are, if not a Saint, at least a Man of Honour, who will not ruin himself even for the Possession of a fine Woman, I will honestly tell you that I love my Husband, and am resolved to be faithful to him while I live. I am,

upon

upon my Honour, glad of it Madam, and do now declare that I esteem you more than I did at the Beginning of our Conversation, having then, and I think not without Reason, suspected you to be a Woman of Gallantry. I am glad of it, cried she, and to confirm you the more I will introduce you to my Husband, who will be fond of a nearer Acquaintance with you, and to whom I will recount every Syllable of our Conversation ; with that she beckoned to a Gentleman, at a little Distance from us, to approach, which he did, and she was as good as her Word, in telling him every Word that had passed between us. But, said he laughing, had the Gentleman agreed to your Terms how would you have brought yourself off ? I would have found a Flaw in the Security or made Use of the Womanly Reason of having altered my Mind. Sir, said he, addressing himself to me, I differ from most of my Countrymen in the Manner of treating their Wives, I am so fully convinced of the Affection and Virtue of mine that I allow her all Manner of Freedom, because I know that she can be under no better Safeguard than her own Honour, and she now and then diverts herself with what we call *Men of Gallantry* ; but these Gentlemen begin to know her too well now to attack her in that Strain, and had I been in your Place and a Stranger I should have believed, by the Beginning of her Discourse, that she was a rank Coquette, but she was disappointed in her Expectation, at which I am not sorry ; nor I neither answered I,

since I can sincerely protest that it gives me more Joy to find a Woman virtuous than otherwise, and what I said to your Lady were mere Words of Course, without the least Intention to embark in an Intrigue, though I had found her willing. Well, well, said she, since we have no Plot upon one another in the Way of Gallantry, let us at least be Friends; as much of that as you please, Madam, and I will sign to that Engagement upon stampd Paper in Presence of a *Notary Public* whenever you please; No, no, cried she, forced Friendship will as little do as forced Love, if it is not voluntary it is of no Value, and if it should break off, there is neither Loss of Money nor Reputation in the Case; so that while you are here we will, if you please, keep up a Correspondence, and when you are gone wish well to one another, as often as you happen to think of *Florence* and I of *Paris*. To give a Proof, said the Husband, of your Sincerity in this new Proposal, I expect that you will beg this Gentleman and his Friend to dine with us To-morrow; my Name, added he turning to me, is *Paluccio*, and my House so well known in *Florence*, that I need give you no Direction; I frankly accepted the Invitation, and told him I would endeavour to bring the *Chevalier de Montferan* along with me; Sir, said he, I will ask him myself if you will do me the Favour to present me to him, which I immediately did, and gave poor *Arabella* a happy Deliverance from an old Lady, who had lulled her almost asleep with the Court Intrigues during the last Century,

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 137

Century, and we could not have obliged her more than by delivering her out of the Hands of this old talkative Woman, Signor *Palluccio* made a very graceful Compliment to the *Chevalier de Montferan*, who answered it in the same graceful Manner, and accepted his Invitation to Dinner, which was indeed magnificent, and we passed the Day there with all the Pleasure imaginable.

AFTER ten Days Stay in *Florence* we set out for *Leghorn* taking *Lucca* and *Pisa* in our Way, and arrived in four Days from our leaving *Florence* at *Leghorn*, where we hired a good large *Tartane* to transport us to *Barcelona* in *Spain*, at which last Place we arrived about the Middle of *April*, after a tedious Navigation, by reason of Calms. The Province of *Catalonia* is bounded by the *Pyrenian* Mountains, which seperate it from *France* on the North, by the *Mediterranean Sea* on the East and South, and by *Valencia* and *Arragon* on the West, being about seventy Leagues in Length from East to West, and fifty in Breadth from North to South.

Barcelona is situated in a large Plain along the Shoar of the *Mediterranean* about an hundred Leagues to the Eastward of *Madrid*. It is of an oblong, or rather oval Form, containing about Fifteen thousand Houses, defended on the South by the Sea, on the West by *Fort Montjoy*, which stands on a rocky Mountain at a little Mile's Distance from it, and by its own Walls and Fortifications on

the North and East. There is a Mole carried a considerable Way into the Sea, which renders it a secure Harbour for small Vessels, but large Ships lye pretty much exposed to Tempests as well as Enemies in the Road. The *Catalans* are brave, hardy, and vigorous, and the noble Defence they made in 1714 against the united Powers of *France* and *Spain*, gave Proofs of their Courage and Struggle for Liberty, which will be handed down to Posterity.

THE Streets are large, well built, and neatly paved and kept, which is not usual in *Spain*. The Inhabitants of *Barcelona* are industrious, civil and obliging to Strangers. Their Women some of the finest in *Spain*, and the Conversation of the People in general much more easy and free than in many other Parts of the Kingdom.

WE had Letters of Recommendation and Credit upon a *French* Banker in *Barcelona* named *Vimont*, who advised us to go thorough the Province or Kingdom of *Valencia*, rather than by *Arragon* to *Madrid*, which was indeed the straightest Road, but by much the worst, being a mountainous rocky barren Country ; whereas the other was one of the most agreeable Provinces in *Spain*, where the Air is pure and temperate, and they enjoy almost a perpetual Spring.

As

As we could not conveniently travel to *Madrid*, about three Hundred Miles distant, in our Chaises, upon Account of the Roughness of some Mountains we had to cross, we left them at *Barcelona*, with Orders to send them to *Lisbon* by Sea, and hired a Litter of four Places for ourselves and *Valets de Chambres*, and two Mules for our Footmen to ride, and took Care not to forget a *Moco de Mulas* that is, besides the Driver, a Guide to conduct us in the difficult passes, and to be our Interpreter. Though we only staid four Days at *Barcelona*, we never appeared in the Streets without being attacked by old Matrons covered with long Cloaks from Head to Foot, who finding we did not understand Spanish, put, the second Time we saw them, Billets in our Hands in French, all to the same Purport, though given by different Women, and wrote by different Hands. These Love Summonses were almost Word for Word the same, viz. *You are lovely young Men and deserve pretty Mistresses, I can provide you from Eleven to Sixteen Years old, as beautiful as Angels, and for whom I can answer; follow me, and I will make you happy.* We shewed some of these Billets to our Banker, and asked him if any of these Creatures were worth seeing? Yes, yes, said he, there are some of them extremely handsome, and besides, our Ladies of Pleasure here are not such as you may perhaps imagine them to be; it is not mere Debauchery that influences

ences them, on the contrary, they sell their Favours at a dear Rate, and we have Instances of many who have ruined themselves without gaining their Ends: They require Tendernefs and Passion in Love, and as they understand all the Refinements of it, they make their Lovers pass through all the Degrees of an Intrigue. If this be the Case said *Arabella*, we must deprive ourselves of the Pleasure of seeing those Belles, for we shall scarce have Time to begin an Intrigue, far less to end it during our Stay. If you were to remain some Time here, replied Mr. *Vimont*, I am very much mistaken if it would be very safe for our *Dons* who have handsome Wives and Daughters (of which there are indeed Plenty here) to have such Gentlemen as you long among us. Monks, Women, and Footmen have been already enquiring what you are, and whether you were to make any Stay in *Bercelona*; which makes me conclude that you have been taken Notice of through some *Jealousies*, and had I not told them that you were to leave this Place immediately, the Billet-doux's would have been already coming thick and threefold; but here, as well as all over *Spain*, the Danger of Intriguing goes far beyond the Pleasure; for a Woman who has granted a Lover a Favour, if he happens to prove inconstant, or even to appear less passionate, she will leave no Stone unturned to be revenged, and rather than fail will complain to a Husband if she is married, or to a Father and Brothers if a Girl, that such

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 141

such a Man, naming him, was attempting to debauch her, in which Case, he may prepare himself for sudden Death, if he is so unhappy as not to leave the Place and save his Life by Flight; so that my Advice to you Gentlemen is, that you will be very cautious while you are travelling in *Spain* and *Portugal*. But, said I, though we have no Intention to embark ourselves in Intrigues with the *Spanish* Women, yet we would willingly see and converse with some of them that can speak *French*; have you no Assemblies to which Strangers may be introduced, and where we can see some of your fine Women? You are come in the Nick of Time for that, said he, To-morrow Morning I will introduce you to our *Viceroy* who arrived here two Days ago, and gives a grand Entertainment To-morrow Night to the Men and Women of Distinction in this Place, which will end with a Ball. I am employed by the Ministry in remitting Money to *Italy* and *France*, and am so well with this Nobleman, that I dare take upon me to say that you will be as well received as if a *Grandee* was to present you. We thanked him, and appointed to be at his House at Ten of the Clock next Morning. We dressed in our gayest Cloaths, and *Arabella* looked so charming, that I was sure she would make some of the *Donnas* go to Bed with heavy Hearts; and she told me I looked so well too, that she was sure I would make as many if not more Conquests than she. We went
at

at the Hour appointed to Mr. *Vimont's*, who was somewhat surprized when he saw us so magnificently dressed. I had some Fears yesterday Gentlemen, said he, that you would do Mischief in the *Viceroy's* Assembly, and I am but too well confirmed in my Opinion now ; for to be sure, added he, our Ladies never saw Men so charming before, and I fear there will be terrible Work this Night. What, cried *Arabella*, do you think there is any Merit in Laced Cloaths ; No, said he, but Dress, I believe you will own, is an Addition to a handsome Person, and though I am no *Spaniard*, I should not be very ready to bring my Wife or my Daughter to a Place, where they should see and converse with such Men as you ; and if I do not hear News of this Night, I wonder on't ; however you will be gone before the Poison begins to work ; but I wish some of them may not be so mad as to follow you, for such things have sometimes happened in this Part of the World. What, cried I, is it possible, that a Woman should go after a Man that she never saw ? You must know, said he, that Passions are strong and ungovernable in this Climate, and when a Female is smitten, the Flame is so violent, that she will sacrifice her Life, her Reputation, and every Thing that is dear to her, to quench it ; what, cried *Arabella*, is there no such Thing as a modest Woman in this Country ? Far be it from me to say, or even to think so, replied he, but a *Spanish* Coquette is quite different from others of that Species

Species in *France*, for the Reasons I have already mentioned, to which may be added the Constraint that Custom lays them under, which forces them to make the first Advances, Men being denied the Privilege of conversing with the Women with the same Freedom they do in *France* and some other Countries ; as a Proof of what I advance, if you please I will relate an Adventure of a Countryman of ours at *Toledo*, where you will pass in your Way to *Madrid*. With all my Heart, cried I, nothing pleases me more than Love Adventures, and I believe my Friend will join his Entreaties to mine, that you may oblige us with it.

THE Gentleman whose Adventure I am going to relate was a Man of Quality, but I neither remember his Name nor Family, only that he came into *Spain* with the Duke of *Vendome* as one of his Aid de Camps, and commanded a Regiment at the Battle of *Villa Vitirosa*, where *Staremburg* was defeated, and the Crown of *Spain* by that Event secured to *Philip V.* After this Battle his Regiment was quartered at *Toledo*, where he remained to keep the Soldiers under strict Discipline, and to prevent Disorders, to which they were constantly exposed by the Prepossession of some *Spaniards* against the *French*, and by the Jealousy and Ignorance of the Monks who make all the Women believe that the *French* are Hereticks. A Difference in Religion among People who are illiterate is such a Bug-bear, that no Familiarities nor even

even common Civilities are to be shewn, so that our Colonel pass'd away his Time in a tedious solitary Manner.

ONE Day as he was returning thorow a By-street to his Lodging, he was accosted by a Woman covered with a Vail: *Signor Cavalero*, said she to him, a Lady wants to have some Conversation with you, and desires that you'll come to the Great Church Tomorrow at Eleven o' Clock; he accepted the Rendezvous, and went at the Hour appointed dress'd out in the gayest Manner, where he saw nothing but Women covered from Head to Foot with long black Vails; but at last perceived one between two others, who distinguished herself by something grand and noble in her Air and Shape. All the three clapp'd down upon their Knees close by him, pulling out long Strings of Beads, and devoutly bowing to the very Pavement. At last he heard a Voice which carried these few Words into his Ear, Come this Evening to the Banks of the *Tagus* at the Hour of Prayer, and follow the Person who will come and offer you a Nofegay: Adieu, retire out of the Church, and do not seem to be in the least curious. The Sound of this Voice was so melodious, that he felt his Heart strangely moved. He did not fail, you may believe to obey the Orders, and lest he should not be in Time went two Hours sooner to the Place appointed than was necessary, where at last the She-Mercury appeared,

peared, who was to present him the Nofegay, ſhe deſired him to follow her, which he did without Heſitation, though Night was come on. They walked for ſome Time till they came where a Chariot was waiting, into which they very diſcreetly placed themſelves. Your Youth and Figure, ſaid ſhe to the Colonel, have made a ſtrong Impreſſion upon the Heart of *Donna Antonia* my Miſtreſs; Love has made her forget all the Dangers of an Interview, and you are beloved notwithstanding the Difference of your Religion. What Satisfaction would it be to *Donna Antonia*, could her Example and Exhortations bring you back to the true Church. I am her Nurſe, and this is enough to let you know how much I love her, but the Hopes of your Converſion has determined me more to ſerve her upon this Occaſion than all the Affection which I feel in my Heart for her. In a few Moments you will be able to judge of my Miſtreſs's Beauty; ſhe is in a Houſe that belongs to me; render yourſelf worthy to poſſeſs the Heart of the moſt beautiful Woman in the whole *Spaniſh* Dominions.

NOTWITHSTANDING the Agitation which the Novelty of ſuch a Situation may occaſion, I (for it is the Colonel himſelf who now ſpeaks) was ſenſible of the Extravagance of this Converſation, and I was reflecting on this Contrast of Manners when our Chariot ſtopped in a little Court: We alighted and I followed the *Duena*, we paſſed through two or three Chambers indifferently furniſhed,

and worse lighted, they led us into a Room, of which the magnificent Furniture and shining Brightness of many Wax Lights in Silver gilt Condesticks, struck me much less than a Woman lying on a Couche in an Alcove, and leaning upon Cushions of rich Stuff's. Approach, *Signor* said she, you may believe I readily obeyed such an agreeable Order, but what became I, upon seeing all the *Graces* reunited in the same Person, and heightened by what is most exquisite in Dress. I threw myself at her Knees, and cried in a Rapturous Extasy, what can I do, Madam, to acknowledge the Goodness with which you honour me? She answered with an inexpressible Softness and Sparkling in her Eys, which would have set me all on Flame, had my Heart been till then untouched. *Clara* has, no doubt, explained my Sentiments, and thereby exempted me from the Confusion of a Confession, which nothing but the Excess of Passion can excuse. The Manner of your Behaviour with me will confirm or destroy my Sentiments. I love you, but the Sacrifice which I commit upon myself will become dearer to me if you render yourself worthy of it, and after such a Confession I ought to conceal nothing from you; you are of a different Religion from mine, and this Point is the only Obstacle to the Inclination which I have for you. If you love me, if the Sentiments which I think I can read in your Eyes are sincere; the first Step is to embrace my Religion. Upon this I took hold

hold of her beautiful Hand to kiss it to avoid a Profession of Faith which I thought very ill timed and preposterous ; but I had scarce touched it when she cried out, give me quickly holy Water, my dear *Clara*, who immediately brought a little holy Water-pot, into which she dipt a Linnen Cloth, and wiped the Place which I had touched with so much Care and Caution, that I could not help smiling ; but being unwilling to condemn, or even to oppose her Prejudices, I resolved to tell her what my Religion was, and Love made me a better Catholic than I had ever been.

How easily does the Language of a Man whom we love persuade, said she, it gets the better of all our Resolutions, it was not in my Power to convince you but in yours to persuade me. In all Probability I love you more than you do me, and it is an Advantage which I will take Care to keep over you. I then kissed her Hand without her having Recourse to holy Water. I begged she would inform me to whom I had the Happiness to speak. You shall some time or other know it, said she, do not seek to penetrate into a Mystery of which the Discovery can be of no Use to you, deserve by an Attachment and unlimited Discretion the Happiness which I prepare for you. Then the faithful *Clara* served preparatory Refreshments for a better Feast. I was enchanted with all the Graces of the beautiful *Spaniard*. Every thing in and about her breath'd Pleasure, and notified

an approaching Bliss, which I soon and greedily enjoyed far above my Desires. Your Love will be of a short Duration, said *Antonia*, my Conquest has been too easy, you do not know how I have combated, my Love draws its Date from the Day of your Arrival; I saw you from a grated Window marching at the Head of your Regiment in the great Square. What Efforts have I not made to banish the Impression which the Sight of you stamped upon my Heart; and it seems I took but little Care to avoid you since I always found you in my Way.

WE passed the Night and the next Day in the midst of Pleasures and tender Disquiets which Passion gives Lovers, but under which the Excess of Delight still supports them. When we came to the unwelcome Moment of Separation, *Antonia* took from under the Cushions on which she sat a Gold hilted Sword, set with Jewels of Value, which I was forced to accept, knowing that the greatest Affront to a *Spaniard* is to refuse what is offered; I therefore received it, kissing the Hilt a thousand times that presented it. After which I took my Leave and got into the Chariot, which conducted me to the Place where we had found it the Evening before.

THE next Morning before I was got out of Bed, a Blackmore brought me a Letter from *Antonia*, tender and passionate; she begged I would take the Air in the Evening
on

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 149

on Horseback in the great Square. I shall see you without being seen, added she, and be diverted with your Uneasiness at not being able to discover me. *Clara* will inform you To-morrow at Eleven o' Clock in the Great Church when and how we may see one another again. Her Orders I punctually obeyed; and, after looking at all the grated Windows with a Lover's Eyes, I was forced to return home without the Pleasure of seeing my Goddess. The next Day I found *Clara* in the Church at the Hour appointed, who told me softly, as if she had been saying her Prayers, about Twi-light come on Horseback, and without Attendance, behind the Walls of *St. Francis's* Convent, where you will find, mounted on a Mule, the Moor whom you saw Yesterday, all you have to do is to follow him; I was, you may believe, punctual, and found my Conductor no less, who led the Way without ever speaking one single Word. After a pretty long and tedious March to a Lover of my Impatience, we arrived at a Castle which seemed to be considerable, and dismounted in an Inner-yard; the Moor took my Horse's Bridle, and made me a Sign to go up a little Stair in a Tower, where I found *Clara* who waited for me, Come, said she, thou happiest of all Men living; she then conducted me with a Cut-throat Lantern through a Closet into a magnificent Apartment, where the beautiful *Antonia* was waiting for me. You get the better of all my Fears, said she, I have the Satisfaction of seeing you at my own House,

notwithstanding the Dangers to which I am exposed, I hope our Pleasure will not be interrupted, but in case of Accident, you may retire, the Moor being at the Foot of the Stair with your Horse. I employed the most moving Terms to express my Gratitude and Love. We were in those Transports of Soul which Love alone is capable of affording, and which cannot be expressed, when we heard a great Noise in the Anti-chamber; Fly, said *Antonia* with Transport, I am betrayed, I must perish, but I shall not complain, if I can but believe you safe. In that very Instant the Door was broke open, and I saw a Man enter with Fury in his Looks, and followed by two Servants armed, he held his Sword in one Hand and a Poniard in the other, and flew to *Antonia* with so much Speed, that I could not hinder him from giving two Stabs and laying her flat at my Feet; as I had Pocket Pistols I shot the Man directly through the Head who had wounded *Antonia*, and the two other Men that accompanied him seeing the other Pistol cock'd did not think fit to attack me. She stretched out her Hand to me, and told me with a dying Voice: Alas! Sir, you have killed my Husband. The two Servants employed in giving what Assistance they could to their Master, left me at Liberty to take *Antonia* in my Arms, and to get to the Door of the Closet; I carried her down Stairs without the least Obstacle, where I found the Moor with my Horse, who assisted me to take *Antonia* before me, and I rode off directly from
this

this fatal Place, without knowing where I was going, letting my Horse take what Road he pleased.

NEVERTHELESS, *Antonia* giving no Signs of Life, I stopped to try if she was really dead or in a fainting Fit, the last was the Case, and she at last recovered her Senses. What, is it you ! said she opening her Eyes, since you are alive all my Misfortunes do no more affect me ; there is no Mercy to be expected neither for you nor me, the Rank and Dignity of my Husband will beget you numerous and powerful Enemies, it is the Marquis de Palamos whom you have killed ; I have no other Resource but my Brother whose Castle is not far from this, let us take the Road to it, I dare say he will not refuse me a Sanctuary. I remounted my Horse, took her in my Arms, and we arrived about Break of Day at the Castle. A Servant went directly to awake the Count her Brother, and we were introduced into his Chamber without being seen but by the same Servant who introduced us. He was terribly surprized at the Recital of his Sister's cruel Adventure ; he loved and pitied her, and gave her all possible Assistance with respect to her Wounds, which happened to be but slight. He advised me to keep myself concealed the rest of the Day, and when Night came, he told me that the Service I had rendered to his Sister made him forget what I had done to his Brother-in-law. My Sister has confessed all, said he to me, and you are so dear to her that
she

she will have me to save your Life, the Friendship I have for her joined to the Confidence you have put in me, by chusing my House for a Sanctuary, engages me to favour your Flight. I will give you a Guide who will conduct you safely to *Madrid* by By-ways. I begged to see the Marchioness, but could not obtain my Request. She charged me, replied he, to deliver this Packet to you, I perform my Promise, and can do no more ; and when he had thus spoken he conducted me to the Place where my Guide waited with my Horse and his own, and we set out directly.

My Heart was tortured with the Thoughts of leaving this charming Woman in her present Condition, and without the least Hopes of ever seeing her if she happened to recover. We marched the whole Night, and rested in a Village when Day appeared. It was then I opened the Packet, in which I found her Picture, with a Letter painting her Grief in as lively Colours as I could have done mine. She begged I would while I lived keep this Picture which she had resolved to give me in more happy Moments. It was in a Box set round with Diamonds ; but what appeared singular, and made me always know the *Spanish* Character, was to find in it a Relick of *St. Anthony of Padua*, which she divided with me, because, said she in her Letter, it was to this that she attributed our Preservation in the last Adventure, and conjured me not to part with it in the Danger
to

to which her Husband's Family exposed me, and concluded her Letter with an Assurance of Love, which nothing but Death could extinguish.

I arrived without any Accident at *Madrid*, and sent back my Guide, with Letters to the Marchioness and her Brother. I went directly to pay my Respects to the Duke of *Vendome*, who received me with that Goodness, by which he gains the Hearts of the whole Army. I told him my Advanture, and he advised me not to remain at *Madrid*, to prevent Attempts of Assassination, as well as the Consequences which such an Affair might be attended with between the two Nations, assuring me, that he would directly give Orders for my Regiment's Marching to other Quarters. I had no Difficulty to keep myself concealed, the State of my Mind making all manner of Company disagreeable, and even unsupportable to me. My Regiment was relieved, and the Marquis de *Palamos*'s Family in vain attempted to discover the Place of my Retreat. At last, the Time of taking the Field approaching, I joined my Regiment. Our Operations were successful, and I was sent to Summer Quarters in a large Market-town, near to which, there was an Abbey of Women.

IN Obedience to the Orders we had to protect all the Convents, I established a Guard here. I went often to walk along the Walls of the Garden of this Abbey, Solitude agreeing

ing best with the present Situation of my Heart. One Day passing under the Windows of one Side of this House, a Letter was thrown out of a grated Window and fell at my Feet, which I took up, and lifting up my Eyes towards the Window, I found it was already shut, so that I could see no Person at it. I was surprized to see that the Billet was adressed to me, and upon opening it, found that the Person complimented me upon the Melancholy with which I seemed to be oppressed; the Hand was unknown to me, and I could not flatter myself that it had been written by any Friend of the Marchioness, having been assured that she died of her Wounds; and yet there were Things in this Letter, which could not have been written, but by some Body who had been informed of our Correspondence.

IN this Uncertainty I returned home to write an Answer, with a View to clear up my Doubts, and the next Day at the same Hour, I posted myself under the same Window, which was opened, and a little Basket tied to a Ribbon let down, which I opened, and finding nothing in it, I put in my Letter, upon which the Basket was whipt up in a Moment. I waited some Time, but no Signal was given, and the Day following a new Billet dropt at my Feet, in which the Person who wrote it expressed a Desire to have some Conversation with me upon my Misfortunes, and desired that in

in the Middle of the Night I would come to the Garden Wall mentioning a Pavillion, near to which I would find a Rope-ladder. I concluded that this Letter was from *Clara*. I came to the Place appointed, where I found the Ladder, by which I got up to the Top of the Wall, and then taking it up, and letting it down on the other Side, I was in a Moment in the Garden. I perceived a Woman covered with a Vail retiring to the Alleys of a Grove, I followed her, and perceived that she seated herself upon a green Bank. My dear *Clara*, said I, upon approaching, for it must be you whom I see, is it then really true, that the Marchioness is no more among the Living? it is only to speak of her, and to join my Tears with your's, that I have been prevailed upon to come here. No, cried the veiled Person, your dear *Antonia* is not dead. My Tongue and Voice failed me upon discovering that it was none other but herself. I threw myself at her Feet, and she leaned upon me, under an equal Agitation with mine. When this terrible Convulsion, I think I may call it, was a little dissipated, we asked one another a thousand Questions; I gently chid her for leaving me so long ignorant of the Place of her Abode. She informed me that her Brother had persuaded her of my Infidelity, and had kept up my Letter from her. The Grief which this News gave me, added she, joined to the unhappy Adventure that had happened, determined me to solicit my Brother to afford
me

me the Means of Living and dying unknown to the World. He spread the Report of my Death, and conducted me himself to this Religious House, where no Mortal knows me. I shall die in it content, since you are still constant and faithful, this is all I could hope for in the cruel Condition to which Love has reduced me; I could not resist the Pleasure of entertaining you once more, the Manner and the Place are suspicious, but my Intentions are pure; make no Attempts to see me again, I am resolved on the difficult Work of forgetting you. The Sacrifice which I pretend to make of you to the Author of my Being is complete; Adieu. I have no more Business with the World. In finishing these Words, she disintangled herself from my Arms and disappeared like a Ghost in the Windings of the Grove, without my being able to find her, and during my fruitless Search, the Day appeared, which forced me to retire.

WHEN I was got home, I found in my Pocket a Love Knot of very fine and costly Jewels, which she had dexterously slipped into it without my Knowledge; I passed and repassed a thousand Times under the same Window, in Hopes to give and receive Letters, and to restore the Jewels, but all to no Purpose, for no Person appeared. I asked to speak to the Abbess, and told her that I had something of the greatest Consequence to communicate to a Lady who was in her House, and whom I described

scribed to her ; the Abbess pretended not to know her, and I judged by her Answers that it was in vain to insist longer, so that I retired with a Heart over-whelmed with Grief.

By this little Story, said the Banker, you may conceive what our *Spanish* Ladies are capable of ; and, as I said before, were you to remain some time here, there would be several *Antonias* in *Barcelona*, and if you will take my Advice you will not appear at the *Viceroy's*. Yes, yes, cried I, we will go there, your Ladies will not be so apt to fall in Love as you imagine, we shall appear but as Shadows which immediately disappear ; and though it were true that our Merit were such as you are pleased to flatter us, it is impossible we can do any Harm. Well, well, cried he, since you think so let us go, for the Hour approaches.

WE took Coach that Moment, and went to the *Viceroy's* Palace, and were most graciously received by the *Marquis de Castellar*, who was then in that high Station. The Assembly was numerous and the Entertainment magnificent. The *Viceroy* introduced us to his Lady, who with all the other Ladies were in a separate Hall from the Men. The *Viceroy*, upon our entering, told the Ladies very gallantly, that he hoped they would not be offended at his introducing two *French* Gentlemen to them, which he did with a Design to convince them that the *Spanish*

Ladies were not inferior to the *French*, adding, that he should think himself guilty of an unpardonable Injustice to the Charms of the *Barcelona* Ladies, by concealing them from two Gentlemen of Distinction, who he was sure would do them Justice wherever they went. The Marchioness, who was a genteel sprightly Woman, advanced and told her Husband very prettily that, in favour of his Recommendation, she hoped the Ladies would for once deviate from the established Custom in *Spain*, which only allowed Women to converse with Husbands, Fathers, and Brothers ; and then addressing herself to *Arabella* who happened to be nearer her than I, Sir, said she, though there are several Ladies in this Assembly who may be justly termed pretty Women, yet as *Paris* is said to be the Center of Beauty and Gallantry, I fear our *Spanish* Beauties and their reserved Tempers will not be relished by a *Frenchman*. I believe, Madam, replied *Arabella*, that every *Frenchman*, who has had such a Happiness as we now enjoy, will allow that no Country in the World can produce finer Women than this, nay than even this very Hall ; but I must confess that the Reserve of the *Spanish* Ladies cannot but seem a little cruel to a *Frenchman*, who never found any Difficulty of seeing and conversing with the Women in his own Country ; but after all, continued she, if the Men are deprived of the Pleasure of seeing and conversing with the Women in *Spain*, they have this Advantage in this Deprivation, that they are not exposed to the
 Lots

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 159

Loss of their Liberty, and to Torments of Love which would probably be their Fate, were the Ladies as accessible in this Country as in some others.

DURING this Conversation, I, who had no Share in it, was examining all the *Belles* with curious Eyes, and I must own that I saw Half a Dozen of charming Women among them. To speak the Truth, the Eyes of the whole Assembly were fixed upon us; my Friend, it is true, had the largest Share, but I was not quite neglected neither, and I had the Pleasure more than once to give and receive Glances from a very pretty young Creature, who seemed to eye me with the same Curiosity that I did her, and I would have gladly had some Conversation with her, but durst not presume to accost her, without being introduced by the *Viceroy* or his Lady. In short, we gazed upon the Ladies and they upon us for about Half an Hour, and then retired to the Hall where the *Dons* were sitting and talking with great Solemnity about Trifles. I whispered *Arabella* to be gone, being quite tired with their dull Conversation, and she not less; so that we both got up, and advancing to the Place where the *Viceroy* was talking with one of the principal Men of *Barcelona*, after begging Pardon for interrupting him, we asked his Commands for *Madrid*, to which Place we designed to set out early next Morning. I have no Commands, Gentlemen, said he, but to wish you a happy Journey, and to let you know, that I

O 2 hope

hope to have the Pleasure of seeing you there soon. We made our Bows and returned to Mr. *Vimont's*, to get Letters of Recommendation to some Places on the Road, in case we should have Occasion for Money.

WHEN we were got to his House ; well, Gentlemen, said he, how do you like our Ladies ? So well, said *Arabella*, that I think it is not at all safe for us to remain any longer here, and if my Friend will take my Advice we shall take our Leave of you this Night, and set out To-morrow Morning ; for to speak ingenuously, added she, this is a most dangerous Place for a Man's Liberty, and nothing has saved me but the Variety of beautiful Women we saw, and the Tumults which I felt in my Heart on the Sight of one Object being counterbalanced by another the Moment after, so that it was tossed to and fro and knew not where nor how to fix, which, perhaps, would not be the Case were I to see any one of these beautiful Women again by herself. As for me, said I, if my Heart felt any extraordinary Commotions, one particular Lady was the Cause of them ; our Eyes pretty often met, and I believe there was certain little Love Particles that took their Flight from her Eyes to my Heart, and I hope from mine to her's ; if a Blush and a down-cast Eye are to be reckoned Symptoms. What a glorious Field of Gallantry are you abandoning, cried the Banker ? I think it is next to a Miracle to see Men at your Age so wise and prudent. I now plainly

ly see that I had no Occasion to give you Cautions, and you are more capable to advise than your Adviser ; for I must own, that though I am not in the Heat of Blood and Youth, I am far from being insensible of the Charms of a pretty Woman, nor even so much Master of my Passions as you seem to be. Your long Stay in this Country, said I, according to the Opinion of Physicians, that in seven Years we change our whole Mass of Blood, Bones and Flesh, has metamorphosed you into a downright *Spaniard*, and of consequence your Passions, by your own Hypothesis, must be much stronger than ours. I do not know, replied he, but it may be so, (though in every Country there are People of very different Constitutions) but this I am certain of, that I never could keep my Heart unmoved at the Sight of a very handsome Woman, nor hinder Desires that were not intirely innocent, though in my cool Minutes I often condemned this unlucky Cast in my Constitution, and am charmed when I see young Men like you resist Temptations, which would have hurried me like a Torrent along, without giving me Time to reflect 'till it was perhaps too late ; and therefore I highly commend your Resolution of leaving this Place To-morrow Morning. Our Banker's Confession made us laugh heartily when we were by ourselves. I believe said *Arabella*, that this poor Fellow has told us very honestly his Case, and I fancy that it is not only his Case, but that of the whole Species,

for in short, my dear *Alithea*, added she, what disgusts me most with the Male Sex, is their brutal Inclinations: they may well tell us, that our Wit, good Humour, Sweetness of Temper, and all that, are the principal Motives of their Attachment, but we see so many and daily Instances of their Indifference, nay even Disgust after Enjoyment, though the Woman's Behaviour and Temper be rather more endearing than formerly, that I cannot but conclude the whole View in Men, who profess to be Lovers, is the Gratification of the sensual Appetite, which is no sooner cloy'd than they appear in their true Colours. It will be no difficult Thing for me, my dear *Arabella*, said I, to chime in with your System; Marriage and Men were always Bug-bears to me, upon the very Account that you have mentioned, though I have not the same Experience that you unhappily had; but after all, can we blame them? Is not our Sex a very odd Compound of Inconsistencies? Is the Wind more changeable than a Woman, and can she afford a Man any real Satisfaction but in a sensual Gratification? Let us impartially examine ourselves, and I am afraid we will find little in us to preserve a Man's Esteem, when he is either cloy'd or disgusted with our Persons and Possession; and were it not for the Tie by which he is bound, and which gnaws his very Vitals, he would soon pursue other Game, not finding any Gratification in what is now become insipid by frequent Use, and since this is and necessarily must be the

the Case of every Man, as a Punishment, I suppose, in Consequence of the Fall of Man, and since, by our Punishment for the same Crime of our Grand-mother *Eve*, we are condemned to be silly, empty, vain and whimsical Creatures, why should we condemn the Men for despising us after we can afford them no more Pleasure? since we know that they cannot, by their natural Frame and Constitution, be long happy in the Possession of the same Woman, and that we have nothing else that can intitle us to their Affection and Esteem; it is a most absurd Thing to exclaim against the Inconsistency of Men, and a more absurd Thing for a Woman who has any Spirit, and is not subjected to certain mean and despicable Desires, to expose herself to the Contempt, and perhaps Hatred, of a Man, whose Happiness, ends with the Honey Moon, if it lasts so long. I am sensible, my dear *Arabella*, continued I, that this System of mine clashes with the Preservation of the Species, and will not bear the Light, for this and several other Reasons; but I may freely speak my Sentiments to you, without being exposed to the Resentment of the Female Sex, who would look upon me to be a Monster more hideous than a *Canibal*, or a *Castrato*. My Aversion to Matrimony, said she, is not inferior to yours, and I wish it were otherwise, because I cannot but think that the Propagation of rational Creatures is a Thing agreeable to the Supreme Being, otherwise Barrenness would be the Fate of Women or Impotency that
of

164 *The TRAVELS of*

of Men, and the rational Race would be extinguished. Now as we observe that Women, notwithstanding the Hardships and Slavery they undergo in propagating the Species, not only forget their Sufferings, but have a natural Propensity to renew them; I cannot help concluding, that the Hand of Providence is immediately concerned in this wonderful Fondness of the Female Sex to make themselves miserable; and I do not know but that it is a Crime in you and me to pretend to be exempted from the common Fate of others, at least I am certain that we ought not to ridicule Matrimony, or deter others from it. I wish I were just now a pretty Fellow, cried I laughing, I would improve the critical Minute, and persuade the lovely *Arabella* to propagate the Species. If I loved the Man, replied she, as much as I do you, I believe I might be tempted to yield to his Sollicitations, though I really have an Aversion to that State, and hope I shall never more enter into it. I am of *Roussseau's* Opinion, said I, that *Le meilleur est d'y penser toute sa vie*, i. e. *That it is best to consider of it as long as one lives*: but it is now Time, my dear said I, to go to Bed, where who knows but we may dream of the Pleasures of Matrimony, and rise To-morrow Morning with different Notions from what we just now have.

NEXT Morning Mr. *Vimont* brought us Money and Letters to his Friends in *Valencia*, *Toledo*, and other Places on the Road to *Madrid*;

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 165

rid; and about two Hours after we left *Barcelona*, directing our Course to *Valencia*, which stretches itself along the *Mediterranean Sea* from North to South. We coasted along the Sea-side till we came to *Tortosa*, situated on the River *Ebro*, over which there is a Bridge of Boats defended by two Redoubts or Castles as some call them. It was possessed by the Allies immediately after the taking of *Barcelona* in 1705 and esteemed by them a Place of great Importance, as it opened a Passage into the Kingdom of *Valencia* on one Side, and the Kingdom of *Arragon* on the other. They ordered the Fortifications therefore to be repaired, and kept a Garrison there till it was taken from them by the Duke of *Orleans* in 1708

THE Town is adorned with several fine Churches and religious Houses, among which the Cathedral, the Royal College of the *Dominicans*, and the Convent of the *Carmelites* are most admired. They make here a great Deal of Silk and Oil, and a fine Sort of Earthen Ware in Imitation of *China*. It is a Town of good Trade, to which the *Ebro* very much contributes, this River being navigable here, and affording it a Communication with the *Mediterranean*.

Tortosa is supposed to be built out of the Ruins of the ancient *Ibera*, a Colony of the *Romans*, near which Town the two *Scipio's* defeated *Asdrubal* the Brother of *Hannibal*; and *Livy* observes, that in his Time it was
one

one of the richest Towns in *Spain*. It is at present a Bishop's See, Suffragan of *Tarragona*. It is pleasantly situated in a Country abounding in Grain and Fruits, having Mines of Silver and Iron, Quarries of Alabaster, and the most beautiful Jasper.

WE continued our Route Southward to *Valencia* upon the River *Guadalaviar*, so called by the Moors, on Account of the Purenness of its Waters. This City is the Capital, and is situated in a fine Plain two Miles from the Sea, lying about Fifty-five Leagues South-east of *Madrid*, and as many South-west of *Barcelona*. All Travellers agree in admiring the Beauty of this Place, and its charming Situation; they enjoy a sweet temperate Air, and are scarce sensible of Winter. They abound in all Things that render Life agreeable. The Town is watered with a fine River, over which there are five Stone Bridges, and their Fountains are innumerable. The Suburbs, large as the Town, are intermixed with the most beautiful Gardens: The Inhabitants are of an obliging agreeable Conversation, and entertain you with an Air of Gaiety, not to be met with in other Parts of *Spain*: Their Women the finest and the most inclined to Gallantry of any of the Sex; but here comes the Curse (for I never met with a Place extremely happy in some Respects, but it was as unfortunate in others) these fine Ladies and their Gallants, occasion perpetual Quarrels; and we were told that there were more

Bravo's

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 167

Bravo's and Assassins Natives of *Valencia*, than of all the Provinces of *Spain* besides, who for a Dollar will murder any Man you are jealous of; so that there is no Safety among all this vast Variety of Delight, which surely must imbitter every Thing that carries the Name of Pleasure.

BUT I am apt to think Murders are not so frequent as Travellers suggest, for all the Nobility and Gentry almost of that Province reside at *Valencia*, Trade and Manufactures flourish here, and there are Abundance of rich Merchants and Tradesmen in the Place, who would certainly find other Seats if there was so little Safety to be met with. Their principal Manufacture is Silk, they have also those of Woollen, and their Foreign Trade in Wines, Oil and Fruit is considerable.

IN the Neighbourhood of this beautiful City, there is on one Side a continued regular Plantation of Fruit trees and Liver-greens, and towards the Sea a Bay is formed by the Mouth of the River three Leagues in Length and one in Breadth, which abounds in Fish and Wild-fowl, and about Half a League to the Eastward is a little fortified Town, called *Petro el Grujo*, which may be looked upon as the Port to *Valencia*. All the Way from *Valencia* to *Xativa*, which is no less than nine Leagues, looks like a Garden, and the Country is so populous that the Towns and Villages are not Half a League asunder, where we see

168 *The TRAVELS of*

see Crowds of Women and Children before the Houses busied in spinning of Silk,

FROM *Pliny* we learn that it was a Roman Colony, as well as by an ancient Inscription, wherein it is stiled *Colonia Julia Valencia*. There are many Fragments of Antiquity still remaining in and about the City. It was the Seat of the *Moorish* Kings, till they were expelled by *James I.* King of *Arragon* stiled the *Victorius*, in the Year 1238, who united this Province to the rest of his Dominions.

AFTER three Days Stay at *Valencia* we took the Road to *Toledo* in *New Castile* crossing a very fine Country and several Rivers before we arrived at the Mountains which divide the Kingdom of *Valencia* from that of *Toledo*, we were much fatigued with bad Entertainment and abominable Beds, which Travellers must lay their Accounts with in most of the Provinces of *Spain*, for which Reason we resolved to be as short Time in it as possible, and to get out of a Country where the People are Slaves to the Clergy, and mad with Zeal and Bigottry.

AFTER ten Days constant travelling we arrived at *Toledo*, about forty *English* Miles to the Southward of *Madrid*. It is built upon a steep Rock, at the Foot whereof runs the River *Tagus*, encompassing three Sides of it; the rest of the City is defended by an old Wall and Towers after the *Gothick* Manner of

of Fortification, and was heretofore esteemed a very strong Place; but being commanded by several Hills, and having no modern Fortifications added to it, is not able to sustain a Siege at present. We find accordingly, that whoever was Master of the Field in the late War, was Master of this City.

ABUNDANCE of People of Quality have their Houses in this City, the Buildings whereof are generally handsome, but the Streets narrow and uneven, for which Reason Coaches are very little used at *Toledo*, Chairs and Litters are found much more commodious in a Town where People are perpetually going up and down Hill.

THE most remarkable publick Buildings are the Castle, or Royal Palace, and the Cathedral; the former is situated on a high steep Rock which commands all the other Hills in the Town, and affords a fine Prospect of the River *Tagus*, and the neighbouring Country. The Cathedral is the richest and most magnificent in *Spain*; it is situated in the Middle of the Town adjoining to a handsome Street, having a spacious Court before it, from whence we enter the Church by eight beautiful Brazen Doors, with suitable Portico's; and from the lofty Steeple there is an admirable Prospect of one of the finest Parts of *Spain*. The Church is 384 Feet in Length, 191 in Breadth and 107 in Height, built of an excellent white Stone. The Roof is supported by 88 Columns which divide it

into five Isles. The Chapels which belong to the Cathedral are richly furnished, and as large as some Churches; the Paintings are exquisite, and the Gold, Silver, precious Stones, and other Ornaments invaluable. It would be tedious, if not impracticable, to enumerate all the precious Gifts which have been dedicated to the Saints real and imaginary in this vast Church, which is in a Manner encumbered with them; and therefore I shall conclude with giving a short Account of those Gentlemen who have the Guardianship of this immense Treasure.

THE Archbishop's Revenue, by those who are modestest in computing his Income, is said to be worth Three hundred and fifty thousand Crowns yearly. He is Primate of Spain, Great Chancellor of Castile, and Counsellor of State; he has the Privilege of speaking in the King's Council, or the Assembly of the States, next to his Majesty, and is possessed of no less than seventeen Towns besides Villages. For keeping the Church in Repair, there are Lands settled to the Value of One hundred thousand Crowns per Annum.

THE grand Archdeacon has Forty thousand Crowns yearly, the Second fifteen, the Third twelve, and the Fourth ten thousand. The Dean has Ten thousand, and the rest in Proportion.

WE remained only two Days at *Toledo*, and took our Way to *Madrid*, travelling as we had done all along in the Morning early and at Night, for the Heats were so excessive that there was no such Thing as coming out of Doors in the Middle of the Day. We arrived at the Metropolis of *Spain* about the Middle of *May*, and went directly to Mr. *Vimont's* Correspondent who had taken Lodgings for us, and hired a Coach, so that we were directly fixed in every respect the Moment of our Arrival.

THERE are two publick Places where People take the Air at *Madrid* *El Prado Nuevo*, & *el Prado Viejo*: That which lies towards *Buen Retiro* is not so agreeable, nor so much frequented as the other. The little River *Manzanares*, glides along through the Meadows, where we see several Fountains spurting up the cool Water extremely refreshing in this Hot Season. The Town, for I think, strictly speaking, it scarce can be called a City, lies in the Middle of a large Sandy Plain, surrounded with high Mountains at the Distance of Eight or Ten Miles every Way, being one of the most barren Spots in the whole Kingdom, and affording scarce any Trees or Herbage. The Town has neither Walls nor Fortifications to defend it; the Gates and the Guards that keep them, serving only to prevent the Running of Goods imported and exported, for the Duties on Wine and all Manner of

Provisions brought into *Madrid*, are very high.

FOR a Week we rambled to and fro, visiting what was curious to be seen, and particularly the royal Palaces. In the Houses of the Quality, there is generally one Apartment for Winter and another for Summer, and in some, an Apartment for every Season of the Year; their Furniture is extravagantly Rich, beyond what we met with even in *France*; their Hangings are either Tapistry, Velvet, or Silk trimmed with Gold and Silver Lace or Fringe; and besides fine Cabinets, Glasses, Pictures, Busts, &c. we meet with a vast Profusion of Plate and Jewels. Instead of Chairs and Tables in the Ladies Apartments, are seen rich Carpets, and Silk or Velvet Cushions to sit on, for the Women here as in other Parts of *Spain*, sit cross-legged on the Floor.

THE Court was then at the *Escorial*, and most of the Nobility either there, or at their Country Seats, the Marquis de *Neuville* Ambassador from *France*, for whom we had a Letter of Recommendation, from the Duke de *St. Agnan* happened to be at a Country House which he had taken some Miles from *Madrid*. We went and waited upon him, and were received in a most friendly and kind Manner. I suppose Gentlemen, said he, you have not been at Court as yet, We told him we had not made any Visits but to his Excellency since we came to *Madrid*. You had

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 173

had best remain here this Night, and as I am to go to the *Escorial* To-morrow, you may come along with me and I will introduce you. We thought this too favourable an Opportunity to be neglected, and therefore readily accepted the Ambassador's Offer, whom we accompanied next Day in his Coach, our own following empty. After he had been some Time in Conference with the Secretary of State, he came out and desired us to follow him to the Kings Apartment, where we had not long remained, when one of the Lords of the Bed-chamber came and told the Ambassador that the King was visible, he made a Sign to us to follow him. His Majesty was seated in a Crimson Velvet Chair under a Canopy, and talking with two or three of the *Grandeess*, who opened from Right to Left when the Ambassador entered; he made a low Bow and walked close up to the King; after a Minute or two's Conversation, he turned and beckoned to us to advance, and I could observe that his Majesty looked very attentively at us. After we had made our Bows, which he returned with a Smile and a gracious Nod, he asked us some Questions about our Travels, after which we retired.

We were presented by our Ambassador to several of the *Grandeess*, and among the rest to the Duke of *Montalto* who was mighty fond of the *French*. The Ambassador was invited to dine at the Marquis *de Grimaldo's*,

and we of course. The Marquis de Neuville having some Dispatches to send to *France* returned in the Evening to *Madrid*, and after he had wrote his Letters he took us with him to the Assembly at the Marquis de Salcedo's Governor of *Madrid*. The Assembly was composed of Persons of the first Rank who gave us Marks of Distinction, perhaps more upon the Embassador's Account than our own. After the Assembly we retired to our own Lodgings, and when we were by ourselves, I know not, said *Arabella*, considering the Civilities we meet with in this Place, why I should be so little pleased with it as I am, and have such a strong Desire to leave it; this is one of the unaccountable Caprices of us Women; and though I know that it is so, yet for my Life I cannot get the better of it, every thing displeases me here, and I am got into such a Fit of I do not know what, that I could willingly sit at home from Morning to Night, and never once stir out; whether this be owing to the Incommodity of this excessive hot Weather, which makes me as indolent as any *Spaniard* of them all, or to some Distemper that I am breeding, I cannot tell, but I never remember to have found myself so low-spirited, as I have been since I arrived at *Madrid*; and were it not for your Sake I believe I should not remain an Hour longer in it. I am glad to find my dear *Arabella*, that our Thoughts agree so well about *Madrid*, where, though I am not altogether in your Condition, I have so little Pleasure that I shall willingly leave it whenever

ever you please, though it would be looked upon as a Sort of Contempt of the Metropolis of *Spain* to leave it so abruptly. Since none of the *Donnas* have done themselves the Favour to fall in Love with us, nor to send *Duenas* or Billet-doux, let us turn the Chace and make Love to them, which I hope will dissipate this gloomy Vapour that sours your Blood. We must ramble a little about among the Convents, talk with the Nuns and Boarders, and get well with Half a Dozen Monks, and I warrant we shall have Work enough upon our Hands. *Arabella* smiled at my Cure, but told me that she did not believe she would be much in the Humour of carrying on Intrigues in *Madrid*. A good Night's Rest, my dear, said I, will, I hope, make all right; and if you continue To-morrow in the same Way of thinking, we shall pack up and be gone as soon as you please, for I shall imagine that the Air of this Place does not agree with you, if this gloomy Temper affects you any longer than this Night.

AFTER I went to my Apartment, having no Inclination to sleep, I took up a Book in which I found this Character of the *Spanish* Nation.

‘ THE *Spaniards*, said my Author, are
 ‘ generally Men of a piercing Wit and ele-
 ‘ vated Genius, but very little improved by
 ‘ Study or Conversation for Want of
 ‘ Schools and Academies, where the Sci-
 ‘ ences are taught in the modern Way; for
 ‘ those

those that do study apply themselves chiefly to the ancient Philosophy or School Divinity, and are such Slaves to the Opinions of the Ancients, that they will admit of no other Systems. *Aristotle*, *Scotus*, and *St. Thomas* are infallible Oracles with them, and he would be thought a poor Physician who did not follow *Hypocrates*, *Galen*, or *Avicena*. On the contrary, they slight the Rules of the ancient Poets, and take up with very mean Compositions of their own, from whence my Author observes, that they have neither good Philosophers, Poets, or Physicians among them; notwithstanding which, he admires them for their Wisdom, Secrecy, Constancy, and Patience in Adversity; he says they are slow in determining, but usually conclude judiciously at last; that they are generous, magnificent, liberal, delicate in the Point of Honour, sincere Friends, agreeable Companions, grave in their Discourse, true to their Words, great Enemies to lying, and extremely temperate in eating and drinking. As to their Veracity, many signal Instances have been given of it by those who have written of this Country, among which I shall relate but one. A Gentleman having killed another in Duel, fled into the House of a noble Lady, and begged a Protection against the Officers of Justice that were pursuing him. The Lady, upon his earnest Intreaty, promised to conceal him, and she had no sooner put him into a private Place, but the Officers entered

entereed her Doors ; and having searched, as they thought, every Part of the House without finding him, they concluded he had escaped from thence, and went about their Business. Not long after the only Son of the Lady was brought home dead, whom she understood had been killed by the very Man she had concealed ; however, such was her Regard to her Word and Honour, that she gave the Offender an Opportunity of escaping from her House in the dark, letting him understand at the same time, that now she had performed her Promise to him, he must expect to be prosecuted with the utmost Vengeance, and that she should leave no Place unsought till she found him, and delivered him up into the Hands of Justice.

My Author goes on. ‘ The *Spaniards*, says he, being naturally devout, the Clergy, who have the Government of their Consciences, have converted this commendable Quality into the grossest Superstition and Bigottry, and taught them such a Veneration for their Priests, that they kiss their Hands and the very Hem of their Garments ; nor have they, as Foreigners observe, less Respect for the Ladies than they have for their Priests, they do in a manner idolize that Sex ; they never say any thing shocking before them, and their well-bred Men frequently approach them with bended Knees, kissing their Hands instead of their Lips ; and if a Lady does them the Favour to commend
any

' any thing they have, as a Ring, a Watch,
 ' a Jewel, &c. they never fail to make them
 ' a Present of it, by which Means some
 ' young Gentlemen have run through con-
 ' siderable Fortunes; for the Ladies know-
 ' ing their Power, too often exercise it in
 ' this Particular; but none of them are such
 ' Tyrants as the big-belly'd Women, who
 ' command every thing they are pleased to
 ' long for, and a Prince would be thought
 ' a Brute who should deny them any
 ' Thing.

' Among their Foibles, the great Opinion
 ' the *Spaniards* have of themselves, and their
 ' Contempt of Foreigners, are none of the
 ' least. As they seldom travel, they know
 ' little of the Beauties of other Countries,
 ' and look upon their own as a terrestrial
 ' Paradise.

' To the Pride and Vanity of the *Spa-
 ' niards* are added many other Vices, as
 ' their wretched Indolence and Laziness,
 ' their Revenge, Avarice, Lust, and Credu-
 ' lity in believing the fabulous Stories of their
 ' Monks without Examination. As to their
 ' Revenge, when a Gentleman apprehends
 ' himself affronted, he does not think him-
 ' self obliged to run the Hazard of a Du-
 ' el, as in other Countries, but makes no
 ' Scruple of destroying his Enemy privately,
 ' by causing him to be poisoned, shot, or other-
 ' wise assassinated. Their Neglecting to
 ' apply themselves to Agriculture and Hus-
 ' bandry

bandry, is generally looked upon as the Effect of Idleness, whereas it is certainly to be imputed to their Pride, or rather the Custom of their Country, where a Man is looked upon with the utmost Contempt who submits to these vile Employments in their Opinion: Their pretended Quality will not suffer them to plough their Lands, or plant their Vineyards. There is not a Peasant among them without a Roll of his Pedigree: Every one of them can shew that he is descended in a right Line from the old *Gothick Christians*, who assisted their King *Pelagius* in expelling the Infidel *Moors*; and big with the pretended Honour, their Lands must lie unmanured, if Foreigners did not plant and sow them for the whimsical Proprietor, and generally run away with the best Part of their Profits. The *French* usually do them this Favour, and carry home considerable Fortunes into their own Country; but this is chiefly to be understood of the Two *Castiles*, and the Midland Provinces, for the Natives of *Galicia* do not only manure their own Lands, but assist the *Castilians* in their Husbandry; and in *Grenada*, *Andalusia*, and the Southern Provinces, peopled chiefly by the Descendants of the antient *Moors*; they do not look upon Husbandry as a contemptible Employment. King *Philip III.* in order to break his Subjects of this unaccountable Humour of starving in the Midst of Plenty, or at least on Lands that might be rendered extremely fruitful by

‘ a moderate Industry, published an Edict
 ‘ declaring, that every Owner of Lands
 ‘ should be deemed a Gentleman, and have
 ‘ the Title of an Esquire, who applied him-
 ‘ self to Husbandry, besides being exempted
 ‘ from going to the Wars. *Philip IV.* pub-
 ‘ lished a Declaration to encourage Foreigners
 ‘ to reside in *Spain*, offering all those who
 ‘ should apply themselves to Husbandry,
 ‘ Trade, or Grazing, that they should be
 ‘ exempted paying of Taxes, or any Duties
 ‘ to the Crown, which encouraged great
 ‘ Numbers of Artificers and Labourers to
 ‘ resort thither from the Provinces of *Au-*
 ‘ *vergne, Limousin, Guienne, Languedoc and*
 ‘ *Bearn in France*; but after they have
 ‘ raised a tollerable Fortune, they usually
 ‘ return home to spend it, and leave the
 ‘ *Spaniards* as poor at least as they found
 ‘ them. It is a miserable Thing, as my
 ‘ Author observes, to see a Peasant sitting
 ‘ before his Gate, or on a Bulk in the Street,
 ‘ in a tattered Cloak, and his Arms a-cross,
 ‘ or perhaps playing upon a wretched Gui-
 ‘ tar, in Summer, when he should be gather-
 ‘ ing in the Fruits of the Earth, while Fo-
 ‘ reigners are reaping his Corn, and getting
 ‘ in the Vintage, and perhaps go away with
 ‘ the best Part of the Crop for their Pains,
 ‘ while the Owner remains almost destitute
 ‘ of Necessaries. But surely no People suf-
 ‘ tain their Poverty with such an Air of
 ‘ Gravity and Satisfaction, we hear no Mur-
 ‘ muring on this Account let their Wants
 ‘ be ever so great. Nor do they know how
 ‘ to

‘ to keep, any more than they do how to
 ‘ improve what they have, *Œconomy* is a
 ‘ perfect Stranger here, it is beneath them
 ‘ to look into their Affairs ; they live as it
 ‘ were from Hand to Mouth, and never did
 ‘ People observe that Precept better, of *tak-*
 ‘ *ing no Thought for To-morrow.*

‘ It is not without Reason that Fo-
 ‘ reigners are astonished to see so rich and
 ‘ fruitful a Country favoured with a pure
 ‘ healthful Air, in a manner forsaken and
 ‘ depopulated ; but there are many good Rea-
 ‘ sons to be assigned for it, besides those al-
 ‘ ready mentioned, of which the Inconti-
 ‘ nence of the Young Fellows, as well as of
 ‘ the Married Men, is looked upon as one
 ‘ of the Chief. When a Lad is arrived to
 ‘ Fifteen or Sixteen Years of Age, his
 ‘ Friends provide him a Concubine, whom
 ‘ he hires for a Month, a Year, or as long
 ‘ as he sees fit, perhaps because he should
 ‘ not marry to Disadvantage ; and as the
 ‘ *Spaniards* are generally much addicted to
 ‘ venereal Pleasures, they are so wasted and
 ‘ exhausted before they come of Age, that
 ‘ they are very unfit to perform the Duties
 ‘ of the Marriage Bed, and often contract
 ‘ Diseases, which the miserable Children feel
 ‘ the Effects of as soon as they are born.
 ‘ And as they generally find more Satisfac-
 ‘ tion in their Mistresses than in their Wives,
 ‘ and consequently give the latter all the
 ‘ Reason in the World to be jealous, they
 ‘ take Care to lock up the poor Wives,
 Vol. III. Q or

182 *The TRAVELS of*

‘ or place Spies upon them, lest they should
 ‘ retaliate the Injury, as the *Spanish* Wo-
 ‘ men frequently do when they have an Op-
 ‘ portunity, provoked to it by the Tyranny
 ‘ and Injustice of their Husbands.

‘ ANOTHER Reason given for their Want
 ‘ of People, is the Expulsion of many Hund-
 ‘ red *Moors* and *Jews* in the Reign of *Phllip*
 ‘ III. from the Provinces of *Andalusia*, *Gra-*
 ‘ *nada* and *Murcia*. The continual Wars
 ‘ that the *Spaniards* carried on for near Two
 ‘ hundred Years in *Flanders* and *Italy*, also
 ‘ swept away Abundance of their Men ; and
 ‘ the Riches of *America*, where they hoped
 ‘ to acquire Gold and Silver without Labour,
 ‘ drew over many thousand Families thither.
 ‘ Add to this the Multitudes who have taken
 ‘ the Vow of Celibacy, and are lock’d up in
 ‘ Monasteries or Nunneries, and all the Clergy
 ‘ in general, to whom the Religion and Laws
 ‘ prohibit Wives, and we shall cease to
 ‘ wonder, either at the uncultivated Lands
 ‘ or Fewness of Inhabitants in *Spain*.

‘ GIVE me Leave here, before I proceed
 ‘ farther, to consider the different Characters
 ‘ of the *Spaniards*, given us by different
 ‘ Writers. An *English* Traveller concludes
 ‘ his Account of them in these Words.’
And thus I take my Leave of Spain, in Hopes
of meeting with better Accommodation in Italy,
it being certain, that the general Poverty,
and villainous Inclination of the People here,
will make me thank God to have passed their
 Country

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 183

Country with Safety ; and as I am taking my Farewel of them, I must declare it as an undoubted Truth, that all the Time I stayed in Spain, I never saw nor heard of any honourable or generous Action done by a Spaniard, but frequently of the direful Effects of their vain Pride, Poverty, Thefts, Murders and Deceits, which are too often committed here.

‘ ON the contrary, another Writer says, After all, to give the Spaniards their Due, such of them as have had the good Fortune of a liberal Education, and improved themselves by travelling abroad, must be owned to be Persons of a solid Understanding, and uncommon Vivacity ; that they both speak and write concisely, are very apt for Politicks, temperate, constant, naturally inclined to Generosity, true Friendship and Bravery ; all which taken together, make their Manners not appear so odious to me, as to some People, perhaps, who have not examined them.

‘ FROM the whole, the Spaniards do not seem to want natural Parts or good Inclinations ; their greatest Misfortune is their conversing so little with the rest of the World ; they are situated at one Extremity of the Earth, as the Chinese are at the other ; neither the one nor the other travel themselves, or are much visited by other People, unless in their Port-towns, from whence it proceeds that both Nations have entertained a Notion of their own Self-sufficiency, and a Contempt of the

‘ Improvements that have been made in Arts
 ‘ and Sciences by the rest of Mankind. Add
 ‘ to this, that the *Spanish* Clergy, lest the
 ‘ People should break through the Clouds of
 ‘ Biggotry and Superstition that surround
 ‘ them, discourage all Manner of Learning
 ‘ and Intercourse with Foreigners; so that
 ‘ where they have imbibed any false Opi-
 ‘ nions, it is almost impossible they should
 ‘ be undeceived. I make no Manner of
 ‘ Doubt, therefore, but it must be very
 ‘ dangerous and uneasy for Foreigners who
 ‘ have not a good Share of Patience, as well
 ‘ as Prudence, to reside among them. If
 ‘ you touch upon the String of Religion, and
 ‘ seem to reflect on any Part of their Super-
 ‘ stition, it is well if you be not delivered
 ‘ over to the Inquisition. If you are too free
 ‘ with the Ladies, you run the Hazard of a
 ‘ Poniard. And if you endeavour to expose
 ‘ the Folly of their Pride and Indolence,
 ‘ there is no great Friendship to be expected
 ‘ from them. On the other hand, where a
 ‘ Man can wave his Zeal for his darling
 ‘ Notions in Religion, and suspend his
 ‘ Complaisance for the Fair Sex, and forbear
 ‘ reflecting on their Absurdities, for ought I
 ‘ can find he may meet with a very favour-
 ‘ able, and even hospitable Reception in
 ‘ *Spain*, and especially from Persons of Dis-
 ‘ tinction.’

My Eyes by this Time were almost shut,
 so that I could read no more, for which I
 suppose the Reader will thank his Stars, for
 I

I fancy this long, and I think ill-natured Character of the *Spaniards*, will put his Patience to a severe Trial if he has a better Opinion of that Nation than this Author would seem to entertain; and I think it is pretty plain, that his Zeal or Bigottry, if you will, for a Religion different from theirs, makes him guilty of the Failing which he imputes to them. Biggottry is an epidemical Distemper, and we find as much of it, if not more in a *Scotch Presbyterian* than in the most superstitious *Spaniard*, and as absolute a Power assumed by a *Mess John* in his little Country Parish as by any Clergyman upon Earth, the Successor of *St. Peter* not excepted.

I got up pretty early next Morning, and went directly into *Arabella's* Apartment, whom I found already half-dressed: I hope, said I, you have had a good Night's Rest, and that the Uneasiness you was under last Night is now dissipated. I cannot say it, answered she, and I still continue to feel such a Damp upon my Spirits, though I am no otherwise indisposed, that I cannot tell what to think of it. Let us go to Mass, said I, and then take the Air in the Alleys of *Prado*, which I hope will do you good. We went to the Church of our Lady of *Almunada*, and we were scarce got upon our Knees when a Woman covered with a Veil planted herself close by *Arabella*, and asked her Charity in a very mournful Tone, who gave her directly a *Piastre*, I thank you *Signor Cavalero*,

said she, and in Acknowledgment of your Liberality accept of this little Straw-Box, which I myself made ; and if you like this, I will To-morrow at this Hour and Place present you one more curiously wrought, and saying this she went off, without giving my Friend Time to refuse her Present, or to thank her for it. As I was intent upon my Prayers I had not observed what passed ; and when we were got into our Coach, after leaving the Church, *Arabella* pulled the Box out of her Pocket, and told me laughing, that she had received this Present from a poor Woman in the Church. I took it out of her Hand, and perceiving that it was exceeding pretty, my Life for it, said I, but there is something mysterious in this Affair ; let us see what it contains, which, perhaps, may unravel the Mystery ; I with some Difficulty opened the Box, but how great was our Surprize to see in it the Picture of a very beautiful Woman, set round with Diamonds of no small Value, and under the Picture, which had been put into the Box, a Letter directed to the Chevalier *de Montferan*, which, with *Arabella's* Permission, I broke open, and read what follows, written in *French*.

To



To the Chevalier DE MONTFERAN.

WHAT brought you into Spain to ruin the Quiet of a Heart undisturbed till you appeared? Into what a miserable Dilemma has your unhappy and bewitching Presence thrown me? On the one Side, a rack'd and tortur'd Heart demands to be eased; on the other, Virtue cries beware of the Delusion: To check my Passion makes me miserable, to encourage it renders me despicable; strange Condition! Fatal Situation! Shall I wish to be happy? No. Shall I resolve to be miserable? Alas! whatever Way I look I see nothing but Scenes of Horror. Fly, too lovely Stranger, fly from this unhappy Place, that you may save my Virtue, though you break my Heart. The Painter, I am told, has not flattered me, and when you take a Look of this little Picture, I fancy you will be good natured enough to pity the Original; but stop here, and do not pretend to see me, it would prove the Ruin of us both; for he who should rob me of my Innocence, though by my own Consent, must wash that Stain with his Blood, and the same reeking Dagger should pierce my own treacherous Heart. You will conclude me mad; I am so: The Struggle between Love and Virtue has made me delirious, and were you just now within
my

my Reach, Passion, perhaps, would turn the Scale, I should sink into your Arms, and believe myself in Heaven. ---- But pardon, O ye Powers above! the Extravagancies of a disordered Brain, and let me, while by your Bounty I feel in my Soul the happy Influences of a providential Care, bid an eternal Adieu to the Enemy of my Virtue, though the Darling of my Heart.

THIS is, said I, the oddest Love-letter I ever in my Life saw, such a Medley of Religion, Virtue, Love, Blood and Wounds, must indeed be no other than the Production of a Romantic Brain; but what can be her Design in sending you her Picture, if she intends never to let you see the Original? I suppose, said *Arabella* smiling, she thinks I am a Knight-Errant very capable of being enamoured with a fine Picture, by which Means she will be revenged of me; I can think of no other Motive, since she plainly tells me it is Death to see her. Ho, ho, cried I, such terrible Words never frighten me, Women may talk of Swords and Daggers as much as they please, but when it comes to the Push they turn faint-hearted, and neither pierce their own nor other Folks Hearts; and I doubt much if this *Lucretia* be so bloody minded as she would make you believe. Whatever may be in that, replied *Arabella*, I am sure I shall take her Advice, and not put her to the Trial; but what shall I do, continued she, with this Picture? Let
me

me see, said I, suppose you should put it into another Box with a Letter and give it to the same *Duena*, whom I believe we shall certainly see at the Church To-morrow. But what shall I write to her, said *Arabella*? I do not know just now, answered I, but I will think on't, and answer this strange Letter, if you are not inclined to do it yourself. You are not only in a better Humour; said *Arabella*, than I, but even at any Time better qualified; softly, my dear said I, and do not oblige me to spend my Lungs in making you Compliments, for none is more capable than you to pen a Letter upon any Subject; by this Time we were got into the grand Alley of Elms, which shaded us from the Sun's scorching Beams.

OUR rich Cloaths drew upon us the Attention of all who were in the Walks, and after we had taken several Turns, we sat down to rest a little upon one of the Seats which are placed there for the Commodity of those who have fatigued themselves with Walking.

WE had not been long there, when two Ladies of the Town came and seated themselves by us, by their Dress they were none of the lowest Class, we made them a Bow when they came to sit down, but said nothing. They discoursed for some Time in *Spanish*, and seemed to be pretty warm upon some Dispute; at last one of them turning to us: Gentlemen, said she in *French*, by your
Dress

Dress you seem to be *Frenchmen*, this Lady and I, have a Dispute which we cannot agree upon, and therefore have resolved to make you Judges of our Difference, and to be determined by your Decision; the Case is thus, continued she, without giving us Time to accept of, or reject the Reference. We have been long Friends and Acquaintances, and have no Reserve with one another, we have Lovers, and it happens that they are united in Friendship as we are; this mutual Intimacy on all Sides, has given Occasion to our being often together in Parties of Pleasure, which has brought about a Change in our Lovers; mine is fonder of my Friend here than he is of me; and her Lover thinks I have Charms superior to her's. Now Gentlemen, you must know that my Keeper has changed Sides as well as her Lover, and would gladly have her, but as I have not altered my Opinion, and have a larger Allowance than what her Lover affords her, is it not highly reasonable that she should indemnify me? which she refuses to do, and this is the Subject of our Dispute. I own, said the other, that what this Lady has told you is a fair Representation of the Case, but I have no Notion of bartering Lovers as we do Horses; besides, added she, though there may be some Difference in the Allowance, what Superplus the one gives in Money is more than balanced in Complaisance, and something else that you may easily guess, all which, duly considered, I think the Exchange ought to be made.

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 191

made, without any Conditions on either Side. For my part, Ladies, said I, happening to be next them, I cannot pretend to be a Judge of your Dispute, because I know not what Value the Lady who spoke last puts upon what she calls *Complaisance with something else*; it will be necessary first of all to settle that Point between yourselves, and then it will easily appear on what Side the Odds lies. I shall never give any Allowance, cried the first who had spoke, for a superior *Complaisance*, I meet with enough of that from my present Lover, and more of it would be fatiguing; so that if I make the Exchange, my Demands ought to rise higher upon this very Account, and I do not know now whether I will exchange at so easy a Rate as I would have done before. Well, well, cried the other, that these Gentlemen may see I am not of a covetous Disposition, your Lover gives you five Pistols *per* Month, and I have only four from mine; I am willing to give you the odd Pistol Monthly, provided our Lovers know nothing of the Matter, so that you will have the same Money with a better Bed-fellow.

As you are a little smitten, said her Friend, with the Charms of my *Adonis*, I would be loth to break your Heart, so even take him and I will try what I can do with your complaisant Gentleman; but lest they should come here and see us with these Gentlemen, which would greatly alarm their Delicacy, and make them perhaps give us both a Bill of
Ease

Ease and insult them into the Bargain, I think it is convenient for us to retire, and to be sure it was, for they were scarce got into another Alley when we saw them accosted by two terrible *Mustachio's*, whom we judged to be their Lovers. Let us go my dear *Alithea*, cried *Arabella*, for the Sight of these Fellows makes me tremble, they look like *Bravo's* and who knows what Projects these abandon'd Women may put them upon. Though I had my own Fears, I put a good Face upon't not to alarm her; we went straight to the Place where our Coach waited, and thought our selves happy when we got into it. It must be owned, said I laughing, that we are both arrant Cowards, for to tell you the Truth, my dear *Arabella*, I did not at all like our Company, particularly when they expressed their Apprehensions of being seen by their Lovers; for my Part, said she, I am trembling still, such an Impression the two swarthy *Dons* or rather *Devils* made upon me, and I shall scarce think my self safe till we are got home, nor shall I ever be perfectly easy 'till I am got out of these terrible Countries; so my dear *Alithea*, let me beg of you to leave *Madrid* and go to some Sea-Port Town where we can embark for *England* or *Holland*. You may be sure, said I, taking her in my Arms, that no Country will be agreeable to me where *Arabella* is uneasy, and I consent to leave this Place Tomorrow, [but as *Lisbon* is nearer to either of the Countries you mention than any Port in *Spain*, and where we can never miss an Opportunity of Ships, my Opinion is that it will.

will be our best Way to go to *Portugal*, where we need make no longer Stay than is absolutely necessary, and not even appear at that Court or in any publick Place at *Lisbon*; for to be ingenuous, I have got enough of these Countries as well as you, and would not be sorry to have the Sea, or at least a good Tract of Land between them and me. When we got home we gave Orders to hire Mules for our Servants and a Guide, and that every Thing should be ready by twelve o'Clock next Day for our Departure. We have now I think Said I, but two Things to do, first to ask our Embassador's Commands and to thank him for his Civilities, and next, to write a Letter to the Original of the Picture. As the *Marquis de Neuville* is still in Town, let us go just now and take our Leave of him, and when we return we'll think of your Epistle of which I will be the Bearer To-morrow, if you don't think fit to deliver it your self; and Writer too, said she, for you promised to take that Task off my Hands, with all my Heart, replied I, so make your self easy. We went to the Embassador's Hotel and asked his Commands for *Lisbon*. What Gentlemen, said he, wearied already of *Madrid*? but after all, added he, I'm not at all surprized, for, at best, the Place is but dull for Strangers, and still worse now; to what Part of the World do you intend to steer your Course? from *Lisbon* to *England* or *Holland*, answer'd *Arrabella*, as we find the Opportunity of a Ship ready to go to the one or other. I believe said he, a Letter from me to our *Consul* there may do you no Harm,

upon which he called for Pen and Ink and desired the *Consul* to assist us in every Thing that depended upon him; we thanked his Excellency and returned straight to our Lodging, from whence we did not stir all the Remainder of the Day. As I did not well know what to do with myself, I resolved to sit down, and write a long Letter to the Virtuous, Passionate, Terrible, and I don't know what Lady.



To the fair Unknown.

WHAT brought thee into my Hands thou bright Resemblance of a fatal Beauty? was it to raise Tumults in a Heart till now undisturbed? On the one Side, I languish for a Sight of the Original, but on the other, I see the deadly Dagger pointed at my Breast. Wretched Case! terrible Condition! shall I see and die? No. Shall I live and not see? Alas! I cannot. Horrors surround me. I am lost and undone. Fly too lovely Picture, fly to the cruel Owner of thy borrowed Charms, and tell her that since she cannot make me happy, she should not make me miserable. I am innocently guilty, she is wilfully criminal: I am ready to give her Heart for Heart, and she is ready to plunge a Dagger into mine. Can so much Beauty and so much Barbarity lodge together? No, I cannot, will not believe it. When I look
on

on those lovely Eyes, that sweet Countenance, is it possible to imagine that there can be any Cruelty in her Disposition, and that she, who to Appearance is Mistress of all the Graces, can dip her Hands in Blood ; No, no, it is nothing but a bug-bear thing called Virtue, which pretends to domineer over the Senses and keep them under her tyrannical Sway. I will grapple with the Phantom, by the Assistance of all-conquering Love I will strike it dumb ; and-----but where am I driving ? Sure I am mad. O Reason thou Distinguisher of right and wrong, let thy kindly Influences dissipate the Vapour that clouds my disordered Brain. Go, little Picture, and tell thy cruel Mistress that if she cannot give her Heart but on the Point of a Dagger, I decline the bloody Present, and in order to preserve both her Virtue and her Life, I will in half an Hour hence leave *Madrid*; and retire to distant Regions where Death is not the Consequence of Love.

WHEN I read this Letter to *Arabella*, she owned that it was an exact Burlesque of the Lady's. We sent to a Goldsmith's and purchased a pretty large Silver Snuff Box as a Case for the Picture and Letter, and went to the Church where our *Quena* soon appeared and planted herself at *Arabella's* Side, who slipped the Box into her Hand, with which she retired, after muttering an *Ave* and a *Pater-Noster*.

ABOUT twelve o'Clock all Things were in readines for our Departure, and we set out accordingly, taking the Road to *Placencia* in the Province of *Eftemadura*. We were scarce got three Miles out of Town when all of a sudden fix Men masked and well mounted surrounded our Litter, and with cock'd Pistols ordered the Driver to take a Road to the right that led to a Castle situated on a rising Ground. You may imagine our Surprize and Terror. One of the Masks approached the Litter and had no sooner cast his Eyes on us than he cried out, We are right, it is they, drive on. I at last pulled up a little Courage and putting out my Head, If it is our Money Gentlemen, cried I, that you want, you shall be welcome to it, but I hope you have no Design upon our Lives, but none of them took any Notice of what I spoke, which added to our Consternation. Our Footmen had Pistols, but the poor Fellows were more dead than alive, and far from any Thoughts of resisting. *Arabella* trembled from Head to Foot and was pale as Death, and to speak the Truth I was little better myself. I clasped her in my Arms, my dearest *Arabella*, said I, take Courage for I cannot but think that there is something more than plain Robbery in this Adventure, else what should hinder them to take our Money and our Lives too if they had any such Intention; the Castle, to which you see they are conducting us, has too grand an Appearance to be the Retreat of Robbers, and I hope we are

more

more afraid than hurt ; I do not know answered she with a faint Voice, what is to be our Fate, but I dread the worst, and I now begin to reflect on the Melancholy with which I have been siezed for some Days past, without any Indisposition of Body, and am apt to conclude that it was a sort of Foresight of some tragical Event ; however happen what will, added she, I put my Confidence in the All-Powerful Protection of Heaven, and shall undergo my Fate with that Patience and Resignation that becomes a Christian. Our Arrival in a large Court-Yard before the Castle prevented my speaking.

Our Litter stopped, and the same masked Person having dismounted, came and made a Sign to us to alight, which we did without any seeming Reluctancy ; he then made a Sign to us to follow him, and these Signs were Words of Command which we readily obeyed. We were conducted, or rather we followed our Commande up to a magnificent Hall, thorow which we passed to another Apartment, and from this to a Third which was a Bed-chamber richly furnished ; here our Conductor left us, and locked the Door when he went out. Is this a real or enchanted Castle, cried *Arabella*, when we were by our selves ? And are we really awake or dreaming ? Let me see, said I rubbing my Eyes, but lest there should be a *deceptio Visus*, let me put the Affair out of Doubt by feeling ; with that I went to the Bed, felt the Curtains and Bed-cloaths, then

the Tapestry, Tables, Looking-glasses and Chairs. This is no Fairy Castle, said I, and I think we are very well lodged, if we were but as sure of Victuals as we are of a good Bed; and I had scarce said the Word when our Prison Door was opened, and our Jaylor, I mean the Man in the Mask, appeared, followed by two Servants, who carried two large Silver Stands, with Wine and Jellies on the one, and Sweet-meats of all Kinds on the other, which they placed with great Formality and Silence in the Middle of the Room, with two Chairs for us to sit on. Pray, Sir, said I, addressing myself to the Gentleman with the Mask, may I be allowed to ask you where we are, and how long we are to remain in this Castle? He made a low Bow, and put his two Fingers to his Mouth, as a Sign that he either could not, or durst not speak, and retired directly, locking the Door as before. Are not your Apprehensions of Death now over, said I to *Arabella*? and do you not agree with me that we are not fallen into the Hands of *Banditti*? I confess, said she, that my Fears are diminished, but what can be the Meaning of our being brought and confined here? Why truly, answered I, that passes my Comprehension; I fancy that there is something of Gallantry in the Wind, and that some *Donna* or other has a Plot upon your Person, but I laugh to think how she will be disappointed. I have no Inclination to laugh upon any such Account, answered she gravely, for should your Conjecture prove true, to be sure no Woman but one of the strongest

strongest Passions could take such a Method as this, and who knows into what Extremities of Rage and Revenge a Disappointment is capable of carrying a Woman of such a hot Constitution ; on missing the Gratification which she expects, nothing less than Poison or a Dagger will satisfy her Rage ; and if we should discover our Sex, will she not look upon us as Creatures that ought to be severely punished, for going about and pretending to what God and Nature has put out of our Power to perform. For my Part, cried I, I am resolved not to die till my Day comes ; let us hope for the best, and in the mean time taste these Sweetmeats in which I believe there is no Poison. If there be, said she, you shall not die alone, so we very discreetly eat what pleased us, and tasted the Wines which were delicious. About Eight o' Clock at Night our dumb Man returned with the same two Attendants, who carried a Basket with all the Necessaries for covering a Table, which was done in a Trice, and then the *Major Domo*, or what you please to call him, made a Sign to his two Myrmidons, who, understanding this dumb Language, left the Room, and soon returned with two Supernumeraries, whom we had not till then seen, with a pretty Supper dressed in the *French* Manner, and served in Silver Plate. The masked and mute Master of Ceremonies made a Sign to us to place ourselves at the Table, which we did ; and upon a new Sign to the Slaves, another Table was brought in, with a large Silver Cistern with Ice Water

ter to cool several little Chryſtal Decanters, filled with different Wines, both *French* and *Spaniſh*, the Name of each Wine being marked with Capital Letters upon the Decanters ; this little Table was placed in ſuch a Manner that we could both of us reach it without ſtirring, and take what Wine we liked beſt : All Things being thus ſettled and put in Order, the Man in the Mask made a Bow, walked out with his Attendants after him, and locked the Door as uſual, leaving us at Liberty to eat, drink, and be merry. Hitherto, ſaid I, Things go on in a very elegant and polite Manner ; here is a very pretty little Supper, what are you for ? Shall I cut you a Wing of this Pheasant-pout, it looks charming ? This *Fricandau*, or *Scotch Callop* ſmells well, that *Fricaſſee* ſeems to be *a la mode de Paris* ; come noble *Chevalier*, eat hearty, and then for a *Chanson a boire*. I had no ſooner ſaid the Word than a charming Voice accompanied with a Guitar raviſhed our Ears with the moſt melodious Harmony I ever heard in my Life. Our Knives and Forks dropt out of our Hands, and we quite forgot that our Victuals were turning cold ; the firſt Song was *Spaniſh*, and though we knew but very little of that Language, we conceived that myſterious Love was the Subject. The next was a Sort of *Venetian Catch*, of which theſe were the Words.

*Qui ben ama sempre teme
Ma un eccesso di timor
E L'affanno della speme
Lo sconsorto dell' amor.*

Which *Mademoiselle de Richelieu* has rendered thus in *French*.

*L'amant sincere est tout-timide,
Mais la crainte poussée a L'excès
Est la facherie de L'esperance,
Le deconfort de L'amour.*

i. c.

The Heart that feels the Pains of Love, is still with Fears alarmed ; but if the Dread runs to Excess, it ruins both Hope and Love.

A little after the same Person, and by the Voice we could easily judge that it was a Woman's, sung in *French*.

*Vous qui donnés de L'amour,
N'en Saurés vous prendre
N'en Saurés vous prendre,
Vous qui donnés de L'amour,
N'en Saurés vous prendre
Iris a votre Tour.*

WHEN she left off ; the Meaning of this Song, said I, is very intelligible, either you or I have raised Tumults in some poor *Donna's* Heart ; in her first Song she declares
for

for mysterious Love, in the second she expresses her Timorousness, and in the last she wants to have Love for Love ; from the whole I conclude, and from the Manner of our being treated here, that we are Prisoners of Love, and need be under no Fears of Daggers or Poison : But suppose what you say be true, replied *Arabella*, how will we extricate ourselves out of the Scrape, I know no other Way but by discovering our Sex, and I dread the Consequences of that. Come, come, cried I, let us finish our Supper, and not trouble our Heads with penetrating into future Events. We cannot metamorphose ourselves into Men for her Sake, and I hope the Discovery of our Sex, if we are at last reduced to that, will cure the amorous Lady.

ABOUT Two Hours after our dumb Attendant returned with two of his Followers, who removed the Dishes and other Things, and in a little Time thereafter two Men, whom we had not seen before, entered with a Sort of Basket, in which there were two Night-Gowns of a rich Damask Stuff, and Slippers of the same, with Night-Caps of fine Holland and costly Lace, who, after laying out in Order our Night-Dress, Sheeted and made the Bed with great Formality and Care ; after which they went out, and returned in a very little Time with a very handsome Desk for Prayer, on which they placed a Crucifix, a Pot of holy Water, two long Strings of Beeds, and a great many
Agnus

Agnus Dei's, and laid two Cushions for us to kneel upon; the mute Director standing like a Statue all the Time; and when every thing was put in Order, he made Half a Dozen Signs of the Cross at every Corner of the Bed; and after a very low Bow to each of us, slept towards the Door with a *Spanish Gravity*, which he took Care to lock according to Custom. When he was gone, and all was silent; Come, my dear, said I, let us say our Prayers and go to Bed. Mine shall be, answered *Arabella*, for our safe Deliverance out of this Prison, and I believe she was as good as her Word, for she continued long upon her Knees.

WE both slept very well, for the Bed was extremely good, and lest any of our Attendants should see us naked, and make discoveries which we were not willing they should, but at the last Extremity, we were up and dressed long before our Jailor came to make us a Visit, who was followed by a Servant with Chocolate for our Breakfast, of which we took each of us a Couple of Dishes, and then were left alone till Dinner time, when we again had a Visit and a Dinner served to us fit for a King. In short for five Days things went on in the same regular Form, and we were entertained with all the Magnificence and Elegance that *Spain* could afford, with singing every Evening, but this Uniformity of Life, and the Thoughts of Confinement became at last so insupportable that we were

were resolved to make our silent Man Use his Tongue, if he had one, by threats, if good Words would not do ; but things took another Turn ; for on the fifth Evening of our Confinement, a little before Supper-time, our Door was opened and a Lady covered with a Veil, preceded by a Dwarf carrying two Candles, came to visit us. We got up from our Seats and advanced to meet her. The Dwarf placed the Candles upon a Table and withdrew. Gentlemen, said she in French, you are no doubt surprized at the meaning of your being detained here ; but if you have not already suspected the Cause, I come now to acquaint you that it is Love, and that this Gentleman, pointing to *Arabella*, has found the Way to a Lady's Heart, the most accomplished Woman in the whole *Spanish* Dominions, and whose Beauty has captivated thousands of Hearts ; but it was only reserved for this happy Man to get the better of her Indifference ; for I must tell you, Gentlemen, that though she is married, she entered into that State more to satisfy the Ambition of her Family than her Inclination to her Husband, whom she does not love, though she lives well with him. My Mistress, for such she is, is sorry that she should have been obliged to have Recourse to Force and Stratagem to bring you here, where you have been confined much longer than she could have wished, but till now she could not conveniently leave *Madrid* ; she waits for you in her own Apartment, and I have Orders, Gentlemen, to conduct you both thither, because she

she imagines you have no reserve with one another, so follow me and I will lead you to a Place, where you will see what will surprise and charm you. She then went and opened the Door, and the same Dwarf came in and took the Candles, with which he lighted us through several Apartments till we at last reached the happy Bower, where we found *Venus* stretched on a Couch, with Charms that no Man sure could have withstood. Approach *Chevalier de Montferan*, said she, and tell me if you think the Painter has flattered me in this little Picture, as you have seen it before, you can the more easily compare it with the Original. Now the whole Mistry is cleared up, said I within myself, and it is just as I suspected. *Arabella* took the Picture in her Hand, and looking at it, I do remember, Madam, said she, to have seen this Picture, which I believe is a faint Copy of a most exquisite Original, which not having had the Happiness to see till now I could make no Judgment of the Painter's Ability; rather say, interrupted she, that this Painting gave you no great Opinion of the Original, since you could so easily part with it. I own, Madam, said she, that I was glad to banish a Thing from my Sight that could disturb my Peace but give me no Satisfaction, since the Preservation of the Original, as well as my own, required my abandoning all Attempts. It is true, Sir, replied the fair *Spaniard*, that I ordered you not to see me, and I thought then as I wrote, but I have now altered my Thoughts, and can see you without a Dag-

ger in my Hand, or any other offensive Weapon but my Eyes, which I believe will tell you that I have no Designs upon your Life, though I may upon your Liberty. Madam, said *Arabella*, first making me a Sign which I understood and answered, I think it would be an unpardonable Crime in me not to lay my Heart open to a Lady of your Merit, and thereby prevent the bad Consequences which might attend my Dissembling; or appearing to be what I am not; know then, dear Madam, that you have before your Eyes, in the Likeness of Men, two real Women whom a Curiosity to see the World has tempted to disguise themselves. Good God, cried She, you a Woman, and directly fainted. We both ran to her Assistance and what with rubbing her Temples and putting an Essence Bottle which I had to her Nose, she soon recovered, and said with a faint Voice, I have but too plainly discovered my Weakness to pretend now that I did but act the *Enamora-ta*; my Heart was really seduced, and a first Surprise made a terrible Revolution in it, but as I lost my Reason in one Moment, I recover it again in another, and am now glad that there is an invincible Obstacle, and much stronger than my Virtue, to prevent my Ruin: I hope, Ladies added she, you will pardon the Extravagancies of a foolish Passion which I long combated but could not conquer, and the Injustice I have been guilty of in retarding your Journey, which you shall prosecute when ever you please, upon this only Condition, that you will favour me after Supper
with

with the Recital of your Adventures, which Task *Arabella* put upon me, and I performed it in the best Manner I could. This charming Lady was delighted with our Story, and told us that she envied our Happiness. She returned to *Madrid* that Night and we took another night's Lodging in the Castle, but not as Prisoners; for after she was gone our Servants were allowed to attend Us, *Lucy* and *Arabella's* Maid were half dead with Fear, though they had wanted for nothing. Our Mute got the Use of his Tongue and made us long Speeches in *Spanish* which we did not understand. Next Day he conducted us to the very Place where he had stopped our Litter, and we continued our Journey to *Placencia*, laughing very often on the Road at our whimsical Adventure, which had very much the Air of a Romance. We passed the Mountains of *Pico*, and after a fatiguing Journey arrived at *Placencia*, situated on the Banks of the little River *Xente*, surrounded with Mountains about forty Leagues South West of *Madrid*. Both Mountains and Valleys in the District of this City are extremely fruitful. The Plains produce excellent Grain, and on the Mountains are whole Forests of Fruit-trees, as Apples, Pears, Chesnuts, Olives, Cherries, Peaches, Apricots, Lemons, Oranges, Pomgranates, Figs, &c. The Town it self is well built, containing about two thousand Houses which form several fine Streets and Squares embellished with Fountains, and is the See of a Bishop.

FROM *Placencia* we took the Road to *Alcantara* three Leagues to the Westward of the Confines of *Portugal*, a Frontier Garrison against that Kingdom, most remarkable for a magnificent Bridge over the *Tagus*, said to be built in the Reign of the Emperor *Trajan* by the People of *Lusitania*. It is raised Two hundred Foot above the Water; and though it consists but of six Arches, is Six hundred and seventy Foot long, and Eight and twenty broad, and has this Inscription on it, *viz.*

IMP. CÆSARI. D. NERVÆ. F. NERVÆ TRAJANO AUG. GERM. DACICO. PONT. MAX. TRIB. POTEST. VIII. IMP. VI. COS. V. R. P.

AT the Foot of the Bridge there is a little antique Chapel hewn out of the Rock, first dedicated to *Trajan*, and afterwards by the *Christians* to the Honour of *St. Julian*. This Town was built by the *Moors* on Account of the Convenience of the Bridge over the River, which here runs in a very deep Channel, having high craggy Rocks on each Side of it. The *Moors* gave it the Name *Alcantara*, which in their Language signifies a Bridge. *Alphonso X.* King of *Leon* took it from them, and gave it to the Knights of *Calatrava*, who afterwards took the Title of Kings of *Alcantara*.

WE

WE crossed over the *Tagus*, taking the Road thorough the *Portuguese Estremadura*, which being so advantageously situated on the Ocean and the River *Tagus*, and having the Capital City, which is not only the Seat of the Government, but one of the finest Ports of *Europe* within its Limits, is better peopled, and consequently better cultivated than any other Port of *Portugal*. We made all possible Expedition in our Journey which was a very agreeable one, being mostly on the Banks of the *Tagus* for eight Days, and every Step producing new and beautiful Prospects.

ON the first of *September 1729* we arrived at *Lisbon*, and went straight to the *French Consul's*, who, upon reading the *Embassador's* Letter, received us with open Arms, and insisted on our Lodging at his House; which we the more readily agreed to as we designed to make as short Stay here as possible. When we asked him if we could get a Ship bound for *England*, there is no Difficulty in that, said he, but as you are Travellers you will, no doubt, incline to see our Court and every thing that is curious in the Metropolis of *Portugal*, which, though not to be compared to *France* and *Paris*, has Things that deserve the Curiosity of a Stranger; besides, it is proper to rest yourselves at least some Days after your fatiguing Journey. As we just now have no *Embassador* here, I have the Honour to be employed by the King our Master, and I will

present you to his *Portugueze* Majesty, who is a most affable polite Prince, and loves the *French*. We are not in such a Hurry to be gone, said I, but that we will be glad to see this Court and City before we go to Sea, but we would gladly be in *England* before the Winter Season comes on; for my Friend and I both are a little Cowardly with respect to travelling by Sea.

WE went next Day to Court dressed magnificently, and had a private Audience. The King received us very graciously, and discoursed with us about Half an Hour upon our Travels, and seemed to be very well pleased with what we told him; I am glad, Gentlemen, said he, to find that you are not prejudiced against Foreign Customs as some Travellers are, condemning every thing that differs from the Country where they were born, which I think is an unpardonable Weakness; if your Majesty had added Arrogance, said I, it would only be treating them as they deserve, for nothing can be more monstrous than to condemn People for different Customs from what prevail in the Countries where we were born, which we seldom examine impartially. His Majesty, upon retiring whispered to his First Minister, whose Name I cannot just now recollect, but he immediately invited the *Consul* and us to dine with him, where we had a Multiplicity and Profusion of Dishes dressed *a la Portugueze*.

AFTER

AFTER Dinner we went to take a View of the Town which stands on the north Shore of the *Tagus*, from whence it rises with an easy Ascent, comprehending in it seven little Hills, and stretching itself along the Banks of the River, is of a very irregular Form, broadest in the Middle, and growing narrower towards the one and the other Extreme.

Olyssippo, the ancient Name of this City, is supposed by some, who are fond of making the *Greeks* or *Trojans* the Founders of all the great Towns in *Europe*, to be derived from *Ulysses*, whom they have assigned for its Founder. But it does not appear, however, to have been a Place of any great Fame or Consequence till these latter Ages; while the *Romans* were Sovereigns in *Lusitania*, *Emerita*, now *Merida* in *Spain*, was the Capital of this Country: The *Suevian* Kings made *Oporto* the Seat of their Government; and the *Gothick* Monarchs never resided in *Portugal* while they had the Dominion of *Spain*. There were several other Towns in this Province, which was then a Part of *Spain*, of much greater Note. It was indeed made a *Roman* Colony, and had then the Name of *Felicitas Julia*, as appears by an Inscription found here, but at that Time it comprehended but one of the Hills it now stands upon.

THEY

THEY reckon it about two Leagues from the Hill of *St. Vincent*, which is at the east End of the City, to the Hill of *St. Katharines* on the West, but the Breadth is very unequal, the Town forming a kind of Crescent on the River. Upon the Hill of *St. George*, which is the highest, and commands all the Town, stands the Citadel, separated from the City by a Wall, and looks like a Town itself. The City is surrounded only by a single Wall, and Seventy-seven antique Towers after the *Gothick* Model, of no great Strength at present: There are Twenty-six Gates on that Side next the River, and Seventeen on the Land Side. It is computed that there are in *Lisbon* 30000 Houses, and about 200000 Inhabitants, and consequently it is larger than any City in *England* or *France* except *London* and *Paris*.

THE Streets are very narrow and steep; People are perpetually ascending or descending some of the seven Hills, which makes it inconvenient to walk in, as well as for Coaches, and occasions Litters to be used pretty much. The Houses are generally old ill-contrived Buildings, and the Lattice Windows are no great Ornament to them. Those of the Nobility indeed are handsome Structures, built of hewn Stone, and with their Yards and Gardens belonging to them, take a great deal of Ground, but few of them have Courts before them.

BESIDES

BESIDES the Cathedral there are forty Parish Churches and about as many Monasteries of both Sexes, which make a tolerable Appearance. I shall not trouble the Reader with a Description of the Churches, which here, as in other *Roman Catholic* Cities, are generally noble Edifices and richly adorned. I cannot, however, pass over in Silence the Church of the *Merciful Society* as it is called, which, though magnificent, is much more celebrated for the Humanity and Benevolence of its Members. It is composed of Persons of the highest Rank in the Kingdom, the King and Princes of the Blood are frequently Members of it, and he who happens to be Steward cannot spend less than a Hundred thousand Livres the Year he serves, if he would come off with Applause. They apply themselves to relieve all People in Distress, particularly those that are ashamed to beg, Widows and Orphans, whom they protect against their injurious Neighbours. They maintain a great Number of poor Virgins, give them Portions, and marry them as they have Opportunity ; in short, they suffer none to want but such as have abandoned themselves to Vice. They relieve Prisoners, and assist them in compounding for their Liberty ; and when any are condemned to Death, they attend and comfort them in their last Moments.

If we take a View of *Lisbon* from the River, or from the Southern Shore, it affords

fords an admirable Prospect ; for as the Town is built in the Form of a Crescent, and the Churches, Palaces, Convents and other Buildings rise gradually from the River one above another, we command the whole City at once. On the other hand, if we look to the neighbouring Country from the Town, we have the most charming Landskip imaginable ; a fine large River a League in Breadth just beneath us, in which we see a Forest of Ships of all Sizes ; beyond it a beautiful Country interspersed with Towns and Villages, and a little farther the Ocean.

THE King's Palace, which lies upon the River, is one of the first Things that presents itself to a Foreigner on his Arrival ; it makes a splendid Appearance, and was designed for a Square, but only one Side of it is built ; some other Buildings have been added by different Princes, so that it is not very regular. There is a fine Prospect, however, from it of the Port, the Ocean, and the Country on the opposite Side of the River.

THE Apartments are grand, very commodious, and richly furnished in Winter ; but in Summer they take down the Hangings and Curtains, and there appears nothing but bare Walls or Pictures on them. There are two Galleries in it about an hundred Paces in Length in the first and second Stories, and Balconies in the Windows. In the third Story is the royal Libr ary containing a great
Number

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 215

Number of valuable Books in Presses. Adjoining to the Palace is a square Court surrounded with a Piazza, where the Merchants meet and expose their Goods to Sale.

We were introduced by the *Consul* to the Count de *Sarcelas* a Nobleman of great Merit and spoke French perfectly well. In *Spain*, Gentlemen, said he, you have, I suppose, found the Ladies pretty inaccessible, but though we have Jealousy among us as well as the *Spaniards*, yet we do not at all lay such Constraint on the Women as they do, and Tomorrow Night, added he, there will be an Assembly in this House where you may see and converse with the Women as much as you please, though, continued he smiling, the Husbands who are not well persuaded of the Virtue of their Wives might do as well to keep them at Home as to expose them to the Sight of Cavaliers so lovely as you two; and had I the least Tincture of Jealousy in my Temper, I should take care not to let the Countess de *Sarcelas*, who is young and handsome, have any Communication with Men of your Accomplishments; though I have no Suspicion of her Virtue, I am not so blindly selfish but what I can see that you are young and lovely, and that it is very natural for a Woman, who is in the Prime of Youth, to think herself unhappy in having an old worn out Husband, whose Age and Imperfections appear more hideous by comparing them with the Vigour and Charms of a young Fellow

Fellow; and this Comparison will lead her to repine against her unlucky Fate, if it carries her no farther. I do not apprehend, answered I, that the Husbands have any Thing to fear from our Charms, though they had not their own Virtue to guard them, and I think it is generally observed that there are more Intrigues in the Countries where the Women are confined, than where they are allowed a reasonable Liberty. In the first Case, the Men by their Diffidence seem to declare that they have but a very mean Opinion of a Woman's Virtue as well as of their own Ability, and this often puts them upon Revenge, whereas in the other Case, a Woman of the least Honour will think it base to betray a Man who places his Confidence in her, and I am apt to think that she will not be so easily seduced as the other who looks upon her Husband as a Tyrant, on whom she ought to revenge herself; your Notions and mine agree, said the Count, and I really believe there are more Cuckolds in *Spain* than in *France* notwithstanding the Precautions of the *Spaniards* and the Liberty which the *French* Women enjoy. I have been often told said *Arabella*, that Jealousy is the Effect of Love, and if this be true the *Spaniards* love their Wives better than any other Nation; but added she smiling, I believe the Women would put up with less Love upon Condition that they would allow them a little more Liberty. It is not Love said the Count that makes the *Spaniards* confine their Wives, but a barbarous Custom which has been introduced among

mong them and is very much owing to the Bigottry of the Monks, who think there is no Woman Proof against Temptation, and some are malicious enough to add that they have other Motives, but I must own that that if any Confessor or Monk whatever should pretend to keep me out of my Wive's Apartment when he pleased, I should take the Liberty to break open the Door, and perhaps be a little rough with the holy Father ; but would not such an Infringement of the Church Privileges interest the Inquisition, said *Arabella* ? that Judicature I own, answered he, is formidable and jealous of its Power, yet of late Years, it has met with several Checks from the Civil Government, where People of Distinction were attacked by it, and I am not afraid to say that I hope a few Years will put an End to their Tyrannical Power : The first Constitution of that Tribunal was good, but by Degrees they extended their Power to an exorbitant Length, by the Weakness or Bigottry of our Princes, who believed it meritorious to grant them Powers of which they often repented, but could not, without inflaming the People even to the Pitch of a Revolt, attempt at once to reduce them. However, our Government, upon some late Occasions, has underhand insinuated to each Member of the Inquisition that, if they carried Things to Extremities, the King would fall upon a Way to punish the Incendaries in a Manner that should make the rest tremble, and that if any of them should dare to influence the

People, nothing should prevent their being sacrificed to the Kings just Resentment, so that they can only vent their Rage now upon a Parcel of Poor wretched Jews, which the Government winks at, though I could wish it were otherwise, and that we knew as little of an Inquisition in this Country, Gentlemen, as you do in yours.

I was, I must own, surpris'd to hear a *Portuguese* talk at this Rate, having always believed that every Mortal in this Country was blindly devoted to the Inquisition, or at least durst not pretend to dispute its Authority, without drawing down upon them the Indignation of that terrible Tribunal; but I found not only by this Nobleman's Conversation, but by several of the Quality, that it was upon the declining Hand, and often checked by the civil Authority.

WE went next Evening to the Assembly, which we found very different from those in *Madrid* and other Parts of *Spain*, Men and Women in the same Hall, and talking as freely together as in *France*. The Count presented us to his Lady, who was a beautiful Woman, full of Life and Spirit. She made us a very handsome Compliment, which we returned in the best Manner we could. Gentlemen, said she, you may pass an Hour or two here, in the Way that fits your Humour best, if you incline to play Cards you may, or if you chuse Conversation, you may have it likewise, either serious,

rious, or gay and lively, and it is the Custom here for the Men to address any Lady they think proper, without the Formality of an Introducer. A glorious Custom, cried I, but a very dangerous one for a Man's Liberty; for if he finds a Lady whose Wit is equal to her Charms, what must become of his Heart? If Fame speaks Truth, answered the Countess, Love does not sink so deep in a *Frenchman's* Heart, as in the Breast of a *Portuguese* or *Spaniard*, and if a Mistress proves cruel, you leave her and hunt after new Game; whereas our Men pine and languish to the last Moments of their Life, and sometimes the Violence of their Passion and Despair, makes them shorten their Days with a *Poniard* or *Poison*. For my Part, said *Arabella*, I have hitherto preserved my Liberty, but though I should loose it, (which perhaps may be my Fate before I leave this Assembly,) I should look upon it to be a very silly thing to kill myself, because I could not obtain my Mistress; for I should thus argue the Case, if she loves me, she will, no doubt, consent to make me happy, and if she does not, must I put an End to my Life? We have, indeed, in *France* a very different Notion of Love, and a Disappointment may make us pass some restless Nights, but it produces no Desires of dipping our Hands in our Blood to end our Torment, which, not to mention the Crime of self Murder, is a cowardly Action, and proceeds from Fear of what appears to be more terrible than

Death; so that were I upon the Coroner's Inquest, I should be very apt to attribute the Action to Lunacy. Well, well, said she laughing, our Ladies may happen to make some Impressions upon your Heart, but I find you will neither break nor pierce it, and I think you are much in the right of it, for I have no Notion of those Desperado's, who rather chuse to kill themselves than not to enjoy their Mistresses. She then asked *Arabella*, on whom she threw some very kind Glances, if we intended to leave *Lisbon* soon, we only wait, said she, 'till a Ship bound for *England*, has taken in her Cargo, and then we go. What, so soon, cried she with some Vivacity, I hope some fair Lady in this Assembly will do us the Favour to retain you and your Friend some Time among us; for I suppose one of you would not go without the other, and it would be very mortifying to the Charms of our *Belles* here, if neither of you are smitten. There is, no doubt, in this Hall replied, *Arabella*, Objects which few Hearts can stand out against, (here she gave a passionate Look to the Countess, which indeed surprized me, knowing her Temper, and the Aversion she had of making Women believe her to be amorous) but what can a Stranger propose to himself by an Attachment where he can have no Hopes, nor any reasonable Prospect of ever being Happy? Our Ladies, said she, are too clear sighted not to discover your Merit, and I dare say there is none of them to whom you address your self, that will
treat

treat you with too much Rigour, at least this I can promise, that if you will make me your Confident, so far as my Interest goes you may command me, upon which she joined some other Ladies, not giving *Arabella* Time to make any Reply, who was very glad, for she must have come to the Point of a Declaration, had the Countess stood her Ground a little longer. I whispered in her Ear, you are in a fair Way my Friend of a most notable Conquest, and I wish you Joy; she smiled and only said that we would talk more of that when we were by our selves. I had a pretty smart Conversation with the Countess de *Ribeyra*, who had been with her Husband in *France*, and was very well versed in the Gallantries of the Court, while she remained in that Country, and seemed to be no Enemy to Pleasures. We passed the Evening very agreeably, and were sorry when the Assembly broke up, because we had seen Nothing like it in *Italy* or *Spain*, and were far from expecting any such Thing in *Lisbon*.

NEXT Morning we went to the Banker on whom we had Credit, where we received several Letters which had been forwarded from *Rome*, among the rest there was one from my dear Count *de Saluce*, by which he assured me, that he still would prefer what he thought the Interest of his Friend to his own Satisfaction, and that he could not but approve of my taking the Advantage of a Gentleman's Company in my Travels, but

that he hoped upon my Return to *France*, he should have the Pleasure of embracing me at *Saluce* in *Auvergne*, and concluded his Letter with hearty and I dare say very sincere Wishes.

WHEN we returned to our Lodgings, *Arabella's* Maid delivered her a Letter, which had been brought by a Person who would neither tell his Name nor from whence it came. She immediately opened it, and here is what it contained.



*To the Chevalier De Montferan, at the
French Consul's in Lisbon.*

YOU, in whom Love cannot produce tragical Effects, are, I suppose, Proof against all turbulent Motions which that Passion is capable of raising in the Heart of a Man of a warmer Constitution; I overheard your Conversation with the Countess, and I think it is such an Affront to our Charms, that a Man should not stab himself when he despairs of possessing what he loves, that I am resolved to revenge the Indignity done to my Sex, and to make you madly in Love with me, or to run mad myself. I challenge you to meet me To-morrow at the Church of the *Dominicans* about Ten o' Clock, from whence we will retire to a proper Field of Battle; and if your Indifference can guard you

you against the Attacks of my Charms, I will deface them in your Presence, and turn a *Rolanda furiosa*; the Bearer will call this Evening for an Answer, that I may know whether I have addressed myself to a Man of Courage or to a Coward.

To be sure, cried I, you must face this fair Enemy, and own yourself to be mad: rather than let her tear out a Pair of lovely Eyes. What would you say, added I, if this were the lovely Countess herself who has sent you this Challenge? Think, said she, I do not know what I should think, but I am resolved not to go to the Affignation; and to convince you that I am serious, I will just now write an Answer that I have no Inclination to combat with her Charms, and far less to be a Witness of her defacing them herself; she then took Pen and Ink, and wrote to the piqued fair One in the following Terms.



MADAM,

I Shall think it no Disgrace to avoid a Combate, in which to be victorious is worse than to be conquered; if I should resist the Power of your Charms, I must behold the dismal Spectacle of seeing them defaced, which is worse than becoming their Slave. But though I am none of those desperado Lovers,
who.

who have Recourse to Daggers when their Mistresses are cruel, yet I am so far from disputing the Power of Female Charms that I will frankly own I have been conquered long since by them, and a certain Lady holds me so fast in her Chains, that I neither can nor indeed have any Inclination to change my Condition. This Declaration will, I hope, convince you that I am far from despising the Sex, though I cannot yield to your Charms. The Countess herself, beautiful as she is, could not make me withdraw my Heart from where I have placed it, and I am hurrying home to receive the Reward of my Fidelity and the Possession of the only Woman that can make me happy.

THIS Letter she left with her Maid to be given to the Person who should call for it, and we went to the Consul's to know when we might embark for *England*; he told us there were several Ships in the River, but that he would advise us to go in the Packet-boat, because of good Accommodation, and that they were stout Ships as well as good Goers. We left the whole Affair to his Management, and told him that we would be ready upon a Call. Our Banker who had received our Chaises from *Leghorn*, told us, that if we did not incline to take them along with us he could dispose of them, to which we consented, being assured that we could be provided in Coaches or Chaises in *England*. Our Baggage was put on board the Packet-boat,

boat, and we only waited for a Wind, which happening to be contrary for two or three Days we appeared once more at Court, and at the Count *de Sarcelas's* Assembly ; but I must not forget another Letter which was waiting *Arabella* when we returned after taking the Air, which contained these few Words.



To the Chevalier de Montteran.

I Thought the *French* had been Men of more Sense than to be filly, whining, constant Lovers, but since you know not how to make the proper Use of a favourable Opportunity that is offered ; go dull Constancy, and make a Merit of your Chastity to the happy Nymph, and may you get a Fool with her the first Night of your Wedding ; if she is as innocent as you, I think it must be so ; for I dare swear you have neither done her Injustice in Thought, Word, nor Deed ; ---- poor Soul I greet thee well.

HERE, cried I, the disappointed Woman appears in her true Colours, and I wish she may not carry her Resentment farther than a few satyrical Expressions ; the Countess seems to be a Woman of violent Desires, and I cannot beat it out of my Head but that the two Letters came from her ; in which I was confirmed by her Behaviour to us at the next Assembly

Assembly, for she received us so coldly, that the Count her Husband took Notice of it. It would not be fair to enhance these Gentlemen, said she, and by that Means deprive them of conversing with other Ladies; for it is scarce to be imagined, that they deviate from the general Character of their Nation, which is to be fond of Variety; though indeed there is no general Rule without an Exception, and I perhaps may do these Gentlemen Injustice, in accusing them with a Weakness, of which, perhaps, they are not guilty; however, as there are other Ladies here who are capable to entertain them more agreeably than I can pretend to do, I will not deprive them of that Pleasure; and in so saying she turned about and left us in a Sort of a Pet, of which the Cause was no Mystery to me; for I think it was very evident that she was highly provoked with the Rebuff which she had met with from *Arabella*, who, on her part, was so provoked at the Impudence of the Woman, that she told me in a low Voice, if you incline to stay longer in this House you may, but for my part, I will be gone directly and never set my Foot in it, again; very well, said I, you now know who wrote the two Letters, and I must be punished for your Quarrels, for I must either lose the Diversion which I proposed to have here this Night, or let you go by yourself. I would be sorry to deprive you of any Pleasure, said she, you may stay, but I must retire, with that she made the best of her Way to the Door, and I followed her; and looking

ing back just as I was going out, I could observe a Sort of Surprize in the Countenances of the Assembly at our sudden Retreat, of which the Countess alone knew the Cause, but seemed to take no Notice of our going. We were scarce an Hour at home when another Billet arrived, of which these are the Words.

‘ YOUR Retreat was sudden, and the only
‘ Thing you could do to oblige a certain Per-
‘ son, though you did not intend it ; but if
‘ you would do her still a greater Favour, it
‘ would be not, to appear at the Assembly,
‘ or any publick Place where she may have
‘ the Mortification to see you.’

Arabella's Maid came in and told her that the Person who brought the Letter waited for an Answer ; she took Pen and Ink and wrote what follows.

‘ YOUR Commands, Madam, shall be
‘ obeyed, and that I may not, contrary to
‘ my Intentions, offend you by my Presence,
‘ I am resolved to confine myself to my
‘ Room for the short Time I shall remain at
‘ *Lisbon*, where nothing but the Wind now
‘ detains me.’

NOT-

NOTWITHSTANDING her seeming Indifference, said I, I am much mistaken if she wishes you a fair Wind, and I dare say Tomorrow will produce a new Billet, if it does, said she, I will not answer it.

As I guessed so it happened, and we were scarce out of Bed when another Epistle made its Appearance, which for its Singularity deserves a Place here.



To the Chevalier de Montferan.

GO, sweet Sir, and may *Boreas* drive thee to the glacial Coast of *Greenland*, which is a Climate fit for a Man of thy frigid Constitution ; but may thou when among thy Icy Mountains be scorched with the devouring Flame of unsatisfied Desires, and die a Martyr under the terrible Convulsions of a raging Concupiscence.

Good God, cried *Arabella*, what a Monster of a Woman must this be, and what a Scandal is she to her Sex ; go, said she to her Maid, and tell the Bearer that the Letter requires no Answer. By no Means, cried I, for it is not civil to be behind with the Lady in good Wishes, and if you will not answer her Letter, allow me to do it. With all my Heart,

Heart, said she, but I will have no more Correspondence with her. I took Pen and Paper, and made her the following Compliment.

‘ THAT I may not be behind with you
 ‘ in Prayers, dear, sweet, luscious Madam,
 ‘ may your Desires towards every Man you
 ‘ see be as strong as they seem to be for me,
 ‘ and may they meet with no better Success!
 ‘ which, though a Mortification to your
 ‘ Body, will be for the Advantage of your
 ‘ Soul; this is a lawful Prayer, and I hope
 ‘ Heaven will hear it; but for your’s it was
 ‘ dictated by Lust, Rage and Fury, the
 ‘ true Emblems of a Place which I tremble
 ‘ to name, and from which *Libera nos*
 ‘ *Domine.*’

WERE we not in Hopes of leaving this Place very soon, said *Arabella*, I should not consent to your sending such a Letter as this; for a Woman whose Passions hurry her to such Extremities, is capable of the blackest Crimes, and indeed, my dear *Alithea*, I think you had better not send it; were we in *Spain*, answered I, your Fears would be pardonable, but the Case is different here, and we have nothing to dread from this Woman’s Revenge, and perhaps such a Letter as this may open her Eyes and reform her, which I should think the best Office I ever did in my Life; for I am sorry

to see a Woman with so much Beauty and Merit as the Countess such a Slave to her Passions ; and do you really imagine, said *Arabella*, that this Letter will cure her ? I thought you had known Women better than to imagine that they are to be bullied out of their Vices ; this Lady, whoever she be, for I cannot as yet be fully persuaded, notwithstanding Appearances, that it is the Countess, will turn quite outrageous upon seeing herself despised, and instead of reflecting upon her own Conduct, she will only think of mine, and look upon me as a Monster who treats her unworthily, and deserves to pay his Insolence with his Blood ; and I dare say her whole Thoughts will be employed how to satisfy what she thinks a just Revenge. Let it be so, said I, but this you'll allow, that in becoming the Object of her Indignation you cease to be that of her Love, and she will sooner forget the Man she hates, than him whom she loves ; her Rage is a sudden Blast which will soon dissipate, but the Passion of Love is deeply rooted in the Heart of a Woman, and alienates her Mind from the matrimonial Duties ; whereas the other naturally leads her to a better Opinion of her Husband, by comparing his Conduct with that of an unworthy Lover, and were there no other Motive but this Consideration, the Letter ought by all Means to be sent. You never want specious Reasons, said she, to support your Opinion ; and though they do not convince me, yet to avoid any farther Dispute, I consent to the Letter's

Letter's being sent, which was accordingly done.

JUST as we had finished our Dispatches the *Consul* came into our Apartment, and told us, Gentlemen, I bring you News that will be agreeable to you though not to me, the Wind is fair, the Captain is below, and you must directly go on board, if you design to take your Passage with him, I have taken Care to provide you in Sea Stores: come, since Friends must part, I will see you safely over the Bar, and return with the Pilot-Boat. We were mighty glad of this News, and went directly to the Water-side, where the Captain's Boat attended, and the good *Consul* did not leave the Ship till we were about two Miles out at Sea. Our Adieus were friendly, and Wishes sincere, and when he was at a little Distance, the Captain ordered five Guns to be fired; and the Crew, according to the Custom it seems at Sea, huzza'd three different Times, which were answered by as many from the Boat, and the Ceremony concluded by a last Huzza from the Ship.

THE Weather was clear and the Wind fair, so that we were soon out of the Reach of enraged Women, and *Arabella* was all Life and Spirits. We are now, said she, when we were by ourselves in the great Cabin, out of the Reach of Daggers and Poison, and are advancing towards an Island which makes a grand Figure in the World, and where we

shall see Customs and Manners very different from what we have hitherto observed ; and if the Characters of some Writers whom I have read be true, particularly *Misson*, a Native of *France* who resided in *England*, they are deservedly the happiest People upon Earth, or at least might be so. The Inhabitants, says he, are active, robust, courageous, thoughtful, Lovers of the liberal Arts, and as capable of the Sciences as any People in the World ; and though they have their Faults, he was satisfied from several Years Experience, that the more Strangers were acquainted with the *English*, the more they would love and esteem them, concluding his Account in a kind of Rapture, *viz.* *What brave Men do I know in England ! what Moderation ! what Generosity ! what Uprightness of Heart ! what Piety and Charity !*

ON the other hand it must be acknowledged, that the *English* are frequently passionate, melancholy, fickle and unsteady, one Moment applauding what they detest the next ; and their good Nature for which they are so eminent, lays them open to a thousand Misfortunes ; they know not how to deny any thing they are pressed to do, though intirely against their Judgments and Inclinations ; they are apt to look upon others as sincere and upright in their Intentions as themselves, which makes them by no Means a Match for those that are thoroughly versed in the Arts of tricking and Evasion ; and this

is

is one great Reason they succeed so ill in their Treaties with other Nations.

THE Nobility and Gentry are too often instructed in their Infancy, by those who have Opportunities of making the first and most lasting Impressions on them, that their Blood distinguishes them from Mortals of an inferior Rank, that they are in a Manner of another Species, and consequently have a Right to treat the lower Class of Men with Contempt and Insolence. And from some few Instances of this kind Foreigners have applied the same Character to the *English* as is given to the *Portuguese*, viz. That the Nobility think themselves Gods, and require a Sort of Adoration. That the Gentry aspire to equal them; and the common People disdain to be thought inferior to either.

You seem, my dear *Arabella*, said I, to have a very high Opinion of the *English* Nation, and if we were to judge of a People by their Court, we should not be so fond of those *Islanders* as you are. What is your Opinion of the *English* Court said she hastily? Why truly, answered I, that it is and has been for some Ages a Shop with Wares in it for all kind of Customers: There is Hope for some, which feeds many at a small Expence; There are Titles for the Ambitious; Pleasures for the Young and Wanton; Places for the Busy; and Bribes, to be closely conveyed to maintain an Appearance of Honesty, and to betray their Trust but now

and then in important Matters: The Gentry, debauched by Luxury, and pressed by Want, become the Tools of wicked Ministers; the mighty Struggle is not for this or that Form of Government, or about the real Interest of the Nation, but who shall obtain or keep the best Posts in the Administration. The People are artfully played one against the other; and their whole Powers which should be exerted in supporting the Constitution, and advancing Commerce, are diverted to maintain Party Quarrels, in attacking or defending this or that worthless Minister, or pretended Patriot, who encourage these unnatural Feuds and Animosities to promote their own ambitious Projects.

WE thus entertained our selves while the Ship was ploughing the Main, and the Wind blowing fresher, she began to make some Motions, which made us both Sea-sick, and throw up what we had in our Stomachs, however we soon recovered, and eat heartily at Supper. The Captain was mighty Civil and careful of us, and told us that if the Wind continued, he hoped we should have a very fine Passage, and so it proved, for on the ninth Day of our setting out from *Lisbon*, we were at the Mouth of the River *Thames*, where the Wind proving Westerly, we were two Days in Tiding, as they termed it, up to *London*, and arrived at the Tower towards the latter End of September, with a Design to pass the Winter in *England*; but our Stay was shorter than we intended, *Arabella* having

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 235

ving received a Letter from her Curate, with the melancholy News of his Nephew's Death, and pressing her return to *France*, where her Affairs required her Presence. And though I had proposed a good deal of Pleasure to my self, in the Winter's Diversions of this great Metropolis, and intended to visit *Scotland* and *Ireland* the ensuing Spring and Summer, yet rather than part with my dearest Friend, I dropt all my Projects, and concluded to return with her to *France*.

WE took up our Lodgings in *Suffolk-Street*, in the Court End of the Town. The Court was then at *Kensington*, and all the the Nobility at their country Seats, so that we could not have come to *London* in a worse Time, but our Loss this Way was more than ballanced by the agreeable Company of the Count *de Camille* and his Lady who had come from their Seat in *Brittany* to see *London* and the south Part of *England*: This Nobleman happened to lodge next Door to us in the same Street, and being informed that we were *Frenchmen* of Distinction newly arrived, he made us a Visit, and told us very gallantly that as we were his Countrymen he could not hinder himself from coming to pay us a Visit, and offering us his Service in a Place where he was not altogether so great a Stranger as we; *Arabella* returned his Compliment, and told him that we reckoned our selves happy to have met with such a Gentleman as him, under whose Protection

tection we would willingly put our selves in this strange Country. I may well be your Governor, Gentlemen, to which Age, and perhaps a good Deal of Experience, intitles me, and as such I may advise you, but for any Thing beyond that, I can have no Pretensions, being a Stanger as well as you here, with no other Advantage, but that of having been three or four Months before you, but to give you a Proof how sincere I am in my Offers of Service, I will introduce you to the Dutches of *Marlborough*, to whom my Wife and I are to pay a Visit this Evening; her House is the Rendezvous of the *Beau-Monde*, and To-morrow's Night we will go to an Assembly where you will see more charming Women than ever you perhaps saw at one Time in all the Course of your Travels, and I do not know, added he, smiling, but I am doing you after all a very bad Service; for it is ten to one, if you can stand your Ground against such Temptations as you will meet with. We will boldly venture, said I, the worst that can happen is a little Love, and as it is a Novelty to my Friend and me, a Tryal of it, I think, would do us no great Harm. Do not make a Jest, said the Count, of what may happen to make you change your Note, for Cupid is a revengeful little Boy, and if he once pierces your Heart, he will punish you severely. Well, well, cried I, it is enough to stoop when the Head is off, and I am not resolved to torment myself with imaginary Evils; right, said he, but

but I am mistaken if you will talk so boldly a Month hence, Time will show whether you, or I are mistaken; but I will now leave you to dress your selves, for I perceive you are still in your travelling Habits, and I will leave a Servant who will conduct you to my Lodgings, and we will go in my Coach. We accompanied him to the Door, and told him we would wait upon him in a very short Time. As our Trunks had been brought from the Ship to the Customhouse, and the Captain, who as I have said before, was much civiler than what might be expected from a Man of his Profession, knowing that we could not appear till we got our Cloaths, used all Expedition to get them visited, and cleared at the Custom-house, and we were not two Hours in our Lodgings, when he came with our Trunks himself. I gave *Lucy* a Moidore to give the Men to drink, when we left the Ship, and we gave the Captain five Moidores by way of Present, more than the *Consul* had agreed for our Passage, and to do him the Justice that is due, he refused to take it for a considerable Time, telling us that the Price that the *Consul* and he had agreed upon, was all he expected or desired, but we pressed him so earnestly to accept of that Trifle, as an Acknowledgement of his Civilities, that he at last was prevailed with to take it, though it plainly appeared that he looked upon it as Money to which he had no just Title. Since I must accept of your Present, Gentlemen, or disoblige

blige you, said he, I will convert it into a Piece of Plate, which will put me often in Mind of your Generosity.

WE dressed ourselves out as if we had been going to see the greatest King on Earth, and went to the Count *de Cani's* Lodgings, who was in Company with two English Gentlemen, to whom he introduced us. Madam *de Cani* was in another Room with two or three Ladies. We are by the Arrival of these two Gentlemen, said he, a Match for the Women in the next Room, and if you please Gentlemen, we will join Companies. The *Englishmen* pretended Business and took their Leave. After they were gone, come Gentlemen, said he, and let me have the Pleasure of presenting you to Madam *de Cani*, who longs to see you; we had no sooner entered the Room, than I immediately remembered the Countess's Face, she examined me with the same Attention that I did her, and immediately asked the Count if that Gentleman, pointing to me, was not the *Chevalier de Radpont*, yes Madam, answered I, and if I am not mistaken, I see in the Person of the Countess *de Cani*, the lovely Miss *Courbon*, whom I had the Honour to see before I set out upon my Travels, good God, cried she, who ever would have thought that you and I should meet at *London*. I have two Reasons Madam to be overjoyed upon this Occasion, the first, that I have the Happiness of seeing you here, and the next, that you have
got

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 239

got such a Husband as you deserved. My dear, said she, turning to the Count, I am sorry we are engaged to go to the Dutches of *Malborough's*, I should much rather chuse to stay at home and get the History of these Gentlemen's Travels, with which, I dare say, the *Chevalier de Radpont* would favour me for the sake of old Acquaintance. As the Dutches expects us, Answered he, we must either go or send our excuse, and as we shall have Time enough to know these Gentlemen's Adventures, if they think proper to communicate them, in my Opinion we had better make this Visit now, and take these Gentlemen along with us, which I have already proposed to them. The Countess consented and we went in their Coach, to wait upon the old Dutches, who kept us to Supper with a good deal of Company. Politics, and Gallantry were the Topicks of Conversation. and the Courtiers and Court Ladies were not spared. It was about two o'Clock in the Morning, when we returned to the Count's Lodgings, and before we parted he invited us to dinner next Day and told us laughing, we will inclose our selves Tomorrow Afternoon, and mutually communicate our Adventures.

WE went abroad next Morning by Eight o' Clock, and rambled up and down for three or four Hours. We took a View of *St. Paul's* Church, which is built after the Model of *St. Peter's* at *Rome*, the *Monument*, the *Tower*, and some of the *Squares*, which are grand.

grand and magnificent. We took our Breakfast in a publick Coffee-house, of which there is a prodigious Number in *London*, and returned home about Twelve, to prepare ourselves for waiting on the Count, who had sent his *Valet de Chambre* with a How d' ye do after we went out.

ABOUT One o' Clock we went to his Lodgings, and sat down to Dinner about Half an Hour after. When we were got at the Desert, he ordered his Servants, in case any Body called, to say that he was gone abroad; and when we were by ourselves, Gentlemen, said he, I should not, to satisfy my own Curiosity, use so much Freedom with you, as to desire a Recital of your Adventures, and if you can resist my Wife's Sollicitations you will be exempted from that Trouble; I cannot say that I will so easily excuse them as you do, answered she, and I hope the *Chevalier de Radpont* will satisfy the Curiosity of a Woman, if it were nothing but by way of Requital for a long Story, which he and some of his Friends made me recount before he left *France*. There is so little interesting, Madam, said I, in our Adventures that they scarce will bear repeating, but since you put it upon the Footing of Retaliation, if my Friend, who was the principal Actor, will consent to my discovering Conquests he made in *Italy* and *Spain*, I am ready to enter upon the Narration. I am afraid, said *Arabella*, addressing herself to the Count, that the Relation of some little trifling Adventures

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 241

Adventures will do me no Honour, however, as your Lady is desirous to know them, I consent to her being satisfied. Since I have your Permission, said I, though I am very sensible how unequal I am to the Task, I will take upon me to tell the Count and his Lady what happened to us, because I know you would pass too slightly over your Conquests, which are the only curious and interesting Parts of our Adventures.

AFTER a little Pause to recal to my Memory Events which I was going to relate, a Thing commonly practised by your Story-tellers ; I began at my leaving *Paris*, and in an Hour and a Half's Time travelled over *France*, *Italy*, and *Spain*, taking care to leave out what might discover our Sex, which was indeed a Loss to the Story. When I left off speaking, the Count said that he did not believe there could be an Instance given in History of so much Modesty, Prudence, and Virtue in two young Men of our Age. What a different Creature was I, added he, at your Years, and how happy had it been for me that I had diverted myself with the Foibles of Women without going farther ; but I always pushed for the last Favour, and had no sooner obtained it than off I went in Pursuit of new Game, and by that Means plunged myself over Head and Ears in Gallantry, changing Mistresses as I did my Shirts ; but Thanks to an extraordinary Accident which Providence threw in my Way to reclaim me, joined to this Lady's Virtue and prudent

Conduct, turning to the Countess, I have got the better of my Follies. If the Particulars may be told, said *Arabella*, you would much oblige my Friend and me to favour us with them, and your Example may fortify us against the Temptations that may fall in our Way. Though I think you have no Occasion for that, replied the Count, I shall be very willing, by way of Mortification to my self, and to do Justice to my Spouse, tell you at least by what Means I came to reform and marry.

I was so much what they call a Man of Mode and of Gallantry, and my Reputation as such was so well established at *Paris*, that I was looked upon as the plight Anchor of Coquettes, and Cast-off Mistresses, and they had Recourse to me in their Distress. This Trade diverted me for some Time, but I at last tired of it, and was ashamed of my Character. The Idea of a more regular Life presented itself to my Imagination; I judged that it would be more conformable to my real Sentiments, and I resolved to quit the Stage of high Life: an Adventure which happened to me about that Time, intirely determined me to yield to the Impulses of my Heart.

FREQUENTLY Letters had been addressed to me, which Persons known to be Men of Gallantry and Fortune receive, the Subject and Stile whereof are still the same. It is a young and lovely Person who declares, with
an

an Air of Timidity, that she finds a powerful Attraction drawing her towards you, to which she would yield upon any reasonable Terms. I diverted myself with these Billets, it is all the Answer they require ; unless one has a mind to accept the Proposal. But one Day I was exposed to a more alluring Trial.

My *Valet de Chambre* came one Morning into my Apartment and told me, that a Woman indifferently dressed had been long waiting to speak to me about an Affair which she could communicate to none but to myself ; I ordered her to be admitted, and that we should be left by ourselves. I remained silent till this Woman should tell her Business, but I never saw Perplexity and Confusion equal to hers. All that Misfortune, Shame, Misery, and dejected Virtue can inspire was painted on her Countenance. She made several Attempts to speak, but the Words died away upon her Lips. Her Condition moved me. I did all I could to dissipate her Fears and to encourage her. After many Efforts and endeavouring to conceal the Tears which burst out in spite of her, with a low and broken Voice she told me that she was in the utmost Misery ; that she had lost her Husband who supported her by his Labour ; that she had been forced to sell every Thing that she had in the House to discharge some Debts ; that she had a Daughter about sixteen Years old whom she passionately loved, but could no longer give her Bread, and that she looked upon this as the greatest of all her

Misfortunes. Here the Tears gushed out in such Floods that she could go no farther. I felt myself strangely affected, her Discourse, her Situation, and her Countenance gave me great Concern. I endeavoured, however, to conceal my Trouble from her, to calm her's, and to engage her to continue. I asked her in what I might be serviceable to her. I have been informed, answered she with a new Confusion which seemed to augment every Minute, that there are rich Persons who will take Care of Girls that have no other Resource but Charity. I come to implore your's. I am very sensible, continued she weeping bitterly, to what Acknowledgment I engage my unhappy Daughter; but I cannot bear the Thoughts of seeing her starved to Death. These last Words were like Daggers to her Heart, and she had all the Difficulty in the World to pronounce them. Shame made her cast down her Eyes, and I perceived that I was as much the Object of it as herself. She was at the same Time ashamed of a mortifying Discourse to herself and offensive to me, I conceived her Case and sympathized with her Sentiments, and therefore endeavoured to comfort her by giving her what Money I had about me, and so dismissed her. How grateful is a Person who is relieved from such Distress, I had all the Difficulty in the World to stop the Torrent of her Thanks and Acknowledgments. When she was gone, I began to reflect upon her Condition, and upon the Combates which her Heart must have undergone before she
resolved

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 243

resolved on such a Step ; this led me to consider how much our Virtue depends upon our Situation.

I passed that Day as usually, that is, with the same Company I used to frequent, and in the same Pleasures, which I could not however relish ; the Thoughts of this unfortunate Woman had made such an Impression upon my Heart, that I was wrapt up in melancholy Reflections, and dull in the midst of Gaiety ; so that I retired, not finding myself fit for Company or Diversions.

THE next Morning, before I was got out of Bed, I was told the same Person was returned. I could not imagine what had brought her so soon again. I ordered her however to be admitted. She entered, followed by a young Girl, whom I judged to be her Daughter, and was not mistaken. They both advanced to the Bed Side. The Mother recommended her Thanks for the Favours I had done her the Day before. The Daughter who was silent, only joined to her Mother's Discourse the most submissive Air, so that I had Time enough to examine her, I never saw any thing more lovely, and the Surprise I was under, hindered me from putting a Stop to the Mother's Flood of Praises. I was so struck with the Beauty of her Daughter, that I gave no Attention to what she said. Integrity, Virtue, Innocence, were painted on
X 3 her

her Countenance ; No such Physiognomies are to be met with among your Ladies of Quality , or Women that make a Figure in the World, the most regular, and alluring Features lost nothing of their Beauty, notwithstanding the Dejection and Paleness which ought naturally to have altered them. She had scarce Strength to support herself ; she had not Courage to look at me, and her Breathings were deep Sighs. I desired her to approach, which she did trembling, and seemed to be under great Terror. What are you afraid of Miss, said I ? Is any new Misfortune happened to you ? What brought you here ? To acknowledge our Obligations, answered she, in a faltering Tone. You do more, said I, than a single Act of Humanity deserves ; you must have other Causes of Affliction, speak freely, I require no other Acknowledgment but that you will acquaint me with your farther Necessities. Instead of answering, she looked at her Mother, and fell a weeping. They flew into one another's Arms, and, with Floods of Tears running down their Cheeks, seemed as if they were taking a last Farewel, never to meet again. I could not tell at first what to think of a Grief so extraordinary, but at last penetrated, as I imagined, into the real Motive. Could you be apprehensive, said I to them, that I would take the Advantage of your Misfortune ? And does not your Terror spring from an injurious Idea of my being capable of so much Baseness ? Alas, Sir, replied the Mother, I thought myself obliged to bring *Julia* to thank
our

our Benefactor, we neither have nor durst think of any other Motives. But ----- I directly interrupted her, because by her Perplexity and Confusion I saw but too plainly her Idea, and therefore thought it incumbent upon me to prevent a farther Explication for my own Sake, as well as for the unfortunate Mother and chaste Daughter. Speak no more, said I, of the trifling Assistance which you have received from me, for which you owe no Acknowledgment, and I offer you what farther Assistance you stand in Need of. Conceive Sentiments more comfortable to yourselves, more flattering to me, and less injurious to us all three. In speaking thus, I directly perceived an immediate Change in their Countenances, particularly in the Daughter, whom I considered with more Attention and Liberty when I found that she ventured to look at me ; which before she had not. They both fell upon their Knees at the Bed-side shedding Tears of Joy, and both spoke together in a Confusion of Thanks, Joy rushed too fast upon their Hearts, their Words were without Order or Connexion, and their Transports were the only Interpreters of what they intended. What ! cried they, Heaven grants us a Benefactor, who out of pure Generosity ----- Good God, how happy are we ! ----- What Obligations ! ----- What Thanks ! ----- They siezed my Hands, *Julia* pressed and wet them with her Tears. Gratitude and Virtue made her lavish of Caresses, with
which

which her Modesty would have been terrified, had I attempted them. Innocence is often more daring than Vice is venturesome.

I was so moved with this Scene, that I could scarce retain my Tears. I made them get up and sit upon Chairs, and at last put a Stop to their Exclamations, but it was easy to observe the Violence they did themselves to obey me.

I could not enough admire the Beauty of *Julia*. I nevertheless can safely say, that this charming Girl inspired me with no Desires offensive to her Virtue. A Sentiment of Respect for her Misfortune and Modesty barred the Door of my Heart against all others.

I enquired into their Situation, and they gave me a particular Detail of what the Mother had told me the Day before, that her Husband had an Employment by which they subsisted, and that in this consisted their whole Fortune; that if this unexpected Death had not happened, *Julia* was to have been married to a young Man who loved her, and she him.

Julia blushed, and her Mother attempting to sound the Praises of the young Lover, the Daughter confirmed what she said, and even outdid her with so much Vivacity, that I plainly saw what the Mother had said about her

her Daughter's Inclination was true. I asked if the young Man did not persist in the same Sentiments, and if their Condition had not changed his. My God, not in the least, replied *Julia*, his Behaviour towards us, since the Death of my Father, deserves all our Esteem. He has given us a Share, added the Mother, of the Income of a small Employment, but I have perceived that he greatly pinches himself without being able to furnish us with the Necessaries of Life, of which, however, he deprives himself, and this has obliged us to have Recourse to your Charity.

I desired they might bring him to me next Day, and then dismissed them, absolutely forbidding more Thanks, which they were always endeavouring at, believing they could never say enough.

THAT Day my Mind was more taken up than it had been the Day before. *Julia's* Beauty was still present to my Imagination. I considered that she loved, and it was very natural to conclude that she was beloved. Love had sprung from Inclination, was fortified by Habit, and even perhaps by Misery which unites more and more those who have no other Resource but their Heart. The Favours and Generosity of this young Man, added to other Motives of Attachment on the Side of his Mistress, the Ties of Gratitude ; his Services were superior to all that I could render them ; they were Trifles to me, and he

he had deprived himself of the very Necessaries of Life. How happy did this Lover appear to be in my imagination! These Ideas wholly possessed me, I took Notice of it, and was at least uneasy, if not afflicted. I was afraid lest some Sentiments of Jealousy should steal into my Heart; but I soon recovered myself, and found that those with which *Julia* inspired me, though tender, were of a Nature very different from Love.

NEVERTHELESS, whether it may be termed Virtue or Self-love, as I had as yet only given Proofs of a small Share of Humanity, I was resolved to be generous in uniting two happy Lovers, and to participate in their Felicity, by the Pleasure of contributing towards it.

VIRTUE, is never without its Recompence. I had no sooner formed this Design than I felt in my Mind a Sweetness, which ordinary Pleasures cannot communicate.

Julia did not fail to come next Morning, with her Mother, and her Lover who was of a lovely Figure, and appeared not to be above twenty two Years old. As his Mistress had informed him of my good Intentions, he saluted me with that kind of Timidity, which every Man of Spirit feels who has a Favour to ask or to receive. The first Thing I asked him was about his Employment, and by his Answer, I found that he had not what was necessary to subsist himself, far less to support others

others. Nothing but Love can find Superfluity in such a poor Allowance. While he spoke I observed that *Julia* did not take her Eyes off him but to observe in mine what Impression his Discourse made upon me. In Effect, I had no sooner told this young Man that I was equally pleased with his Person and Discourse, than all the Symptoms of Joy appeared in *Julia*'s Countenance. I asked if they still had Thoughts of Marriage. The young Man answered directly; my Happiness, said he, would, no doubt, depend upon my being united to *Julia*, if I could render her happy, I desire a Fortune with no other View; but since I have none, I cannot bear the Thoughts of making her miserable. If this Fear, said I, be the only Obstacle to your Union, I will take Care to remove it, and I had no sooner said the Word than *Julia* returned me Thanks with so much Vivacity and Ardour, for my Goodness to the Mother and Daughter, that I saw evidently the Offers of Service to her Lover, touched her Heart more sensibly than all the Rest. He told me that if he could be so happy as to be admitted into my Service, he would lay down his little Employment, which the Mother and Daughter seconded. A Thought came directly into my Head. The greatest Part of my Estate lies in *Brittany*. The licentious Life I led at *Paris* gave me very little Time to take any Care of my Affairs, and the Persons, under whose Management they were, discharged their Trust but very indifferently. I asked them if they could think of going to
live

live at my Seat, where I would constitute the young Man my Steward, and give him a handsome Allowance.

THE young Lover protested, that where he could live with *Julia* would be the most agreeable Place to him, and that he would prefer to all Employments the Happiness of being attached to me. *Julia* and her Mother were of the same Sentiments. A few Days after, I united the two Lovers, and procured a pretty good Employment for the Husband, which he could exercise without neglecting my Affairs, and I then made them set out for *Brittany*. Nothing ever gave me so lively an Image of a perfect Happiness as the Transports of the two married young Folks, Love and Gratitude filled their Hearts, and they both appeared in such a strong Light, that I never in my Life felt a Pleasures equal to that of having made them happy. The Author of a good Office is he that reaps the most delicious Fruit. Their happy State seemed to be reflected upon me. All sensual Pleasure, are far inferior to what I felt, and there must be in the Heart a particular Sense far above all the Rest.

I have had no Cause to repent my trusting them with the Management of my Affairs but I am indebted to them for an Obligation of a higher Nature, *Viz.* The happy Change produced at that Time in my Heart, which longed to be in such a State as their's. I found a Void in my Soul, which
all

all my delusive Pleasures could not fill up : their Tumult rather stunned than satisfied me, and I felt that I could not be happy till this Void in my Heart was supplied. The Idea of this Happiness rendered all my Pleasures hateful, and, to avoid their Importunity, I resolved to go to a Friend's House, some Leagues from *Paris*, who had been long soliciting me to come and pass some Time with him in the Country.

I found at his House the Countess of *Randau*, Widow of an old peevish but rich Man, who died two Months after their Marriage. Good God, cried I, interrupting the Count, was it your Fate, Madam, to be married to the old Gentleman from whom you fled when I had the Honour of seeing you first. No, Sir, said the Countess, my late Husband was a Man of Quality and Fortune ; and my first old Lover had neither ; but, added she, addressing herself to her Husband, if you are a faithful Historian, my Weakness must appear to these Gentlemen in so bad a Light, that it would give me too great Confusion to hear it recounted ; for which Reason, I will beg leave to retire while the Count is upon the unguarded Part of my Life. My Dear, said he, taking her by the Hand, you have no Occasion to be ashamed of the Favours you bestowed on me, which the most rigid Censurers cannot condemn, if they consider upon what Conditions I obtained them, and that they are fulfilled. I will not pretend, said she, to aggravate a Crime, which you are so

VOL. III. Y kind

kind as to extenuate, however, as I could not be put in Mind of some passionate Moments, where Love triumphed over my Reason, I hope you will allow me to retire, that I may be exempted from the Confusion and Blushes, which I could not avoid being present ; with that she got up and retired to another Room, and the Count thus pursued his Story.

As I said before, Gentlemen, I found the Countess of *Randau*, at my Friend's House, who was in the twenty third Year of her Age, and had been prevailed upon to marry the old Count for the sake of his Fortune, and a considerable Dower, that he settled upon her, more than one Half of his Estate, which, considering his rough and jealous Temper, was in no proportion to the ill Treatment she met with, and bore with all the Patience that the strictest Virtue required, and though she could not give him her Heart, yet she did her Duty without the least Sign of Reluctancy, so that her Conduct made her be respected without rendering her more happy.

I scarce knew her, because she appeared very little in Public, and when Chance brought her in my Way, her reserved Temper, made me look upon her as a Woman, who had always appeared too respectable for me who conversed with Women of very different Characters from hers. But I was now in a very different Disposition, and could more favourably look upon a Woman of her Stamp. Her Conversation, and a more familiar

liar Correspondence, which people have in the Country, gave me an Opportunity of knowing her better, and still to her Advantage. As she never had the least Inclination for her Husband, her Behaviour was decent without Affliction, and nothing hindered her Character from appearing in its full and best Light.

The Countess of *Randau* had more Solidity than Wit, since it behoves us to make a Distinction between them, or rather her Understanding was more just than brilliant. Her Conversation had nothing of those Excursions which captivate at first, and then fatigue us. We were neither struck nor astonished with what she said, but it always forced our Approbation. She was esteemed by all Persons of Worth, and respected by those who had the least Pretensions to Merit. Her Figure inspired Love, her Character was formed for Friendship, her Esteem supposed Virtue. In fine, the brightest Soul united to the most lovely Body composed the Countess of *Randau*. I soon perceived what she was, and felt it better than I could Express it. In short, I was smitten without foreseeing it, and loved her passionately, when I believed that I only respected her.

It was not long before I understood the Nature of my Sentiments. I had been some Days with the Countess in this House when she gave Orders to make ready her Coach, to return to *Paris*. This Order afflicted me

without knowing for what Reason, but I soon felt the true Motive. I had too much Experience of my Heart, to be ignorant of its Situation. I discovered that I loved with more Ardour than ever I had done. The Thoughts of letting the Countess go away without discovering my Sentiments, were Death to me; luckily the Master of the House prevailed with her to remain two Days after she intended to be gone. I resolved to take the Benefit of it, and to make my Declaration before she set out. I never found my self in a Situation so perplexing. I who was so accustomed with Women, and free with them even beyond the Limits of Decency, durst not scarce open my Mouth. Let not the Women complain of Men, for they are but what they have made them. I had several Occasions of explaining my Sentiments to Madam Randau, but Respect still kept me silent. Not being able to get the better of my Timidity, I resolved that my Conduct should declare my Sentiments, without daring to confess them. I restricted my self to asking Permission of making my Court to her at *Paris*, and she seemed to be at a Loss how to take my Proposal. Instead of giving me a direct Answer, she told me that her House was not a proper Place for a Man of my Taste, that the Retirement in which she lived, did not well agree with a Man so much conversant and so much taken up with the World as I was. This Answer, bordered so close upon a Refusal, that I would not press her to a clearer Explication, fully resolved to interpret it as a Permission. I did not answer her at that Time but by indefinite

nite Compliments, which mean what we please, because they have no Meaning at all.

MADAM *Randau* went away next Day, I remained but a short Time after she was gone, and was no sooner at *Paris*, than I paid her a Visit. She appeared to be a little surprized, but received me civilly. My first Visit was short, and I made several others of the same Kind. I was afraid of being importunate, before I had ingratiated my self so far with her as to go freely to her House. My Visits became more frequent, and in a short Time, I was like a Ghost who haunted her House from Morning to Night. Every other Place displeased me. My Friends, that is my common Acquaintances, found that I had of late shuned their Company, and rallied me upon it, when they happened to meet me, without pressing me, however, to return among them. Those who are united by the Ties of Pleasure, only have this Advantage, that they have more Vivacity upon their Meeting, than Eagerness to find one another out; they accept of one another without making it their Choice, lose one another with seperating, enjoy the Pleasure of seeing one another, without desiring it, and compleatly forget one another in Absence.

I therefore peaceably enjoyed the Happiness of seeing Madam *Randau*. As she received very little Company, I might have easily found an Opportunity of discovering my Heart; but whether it was this Facility itself

that hindered my laying hold of an Opportunity, which I could certainly have at any Time, or that the respect with which she had at first inspired me laid a constant Constraint upon me; I durst not venture a Declaration, which I had without any Ceremony made to all the Women whom I did not love, and it happened that in this Moment, when my Heart really felt the Effects of Love, I durst not so much as mention the Word. I did not, it is true, tell Madam *Randau* that I loved her, but my whole Conduct declared it for me, and I even perceived that my Sentiments did not escape her Penetration. Such Discoveries are never offensive to a Woman, but a Declaration may displease her, because it requires a Return, and always supposes Hopes to obtain it. I imagined that the surest Means of succeeding with her was, to endeavour to make my self Master of her Heart, before I ventured to ask it. I had already assiduously frequented Madam *Randau* for above a Month upon this Footing, and I perhaps should have gone on for a long Time in the same Manner, had she not given me an Opportunity of declaring my self. She told me, one Day, that she was surprized a Man so unsettled as I, could remain so long as I did in a House so retired and so dull as her's. This ought to shew you, Madam, answered I, that Dissipation is less the Mark of Pleasure, than the Disquiet of a Man who is in quest of it, without finding it, and when I have the Happiness of making my Court to you, I desire none other. I did not intend, said she, to lay you under the Necessity of making me a Compliment,

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 259

Compliment, but I was really astonished that you should be so unsettled as People say, or so prodigiously changed. It is to you, Madam, said I, that I owe so singular a Change, it is you who have pulled me from all my vain Pleasures, it is with you that I feel the most lively and pure that I ever in my Life tasted : too happy if one Time or other you will deign to share in them. Madam *Randau* wanted to interrupt me, but I gave her no Time. I had till then been tied down by a constrained Silence, and I had no sooner broke the Ice, than I found my self eased of a heavy Burthen, and continued with the greatest Vivacity. Yes, Madam, pursued I, I perceive that I am attached to you for Life, that every Thing would be insupportable to me without you, and that you are every Thing that my Heart can desire. Till now I have been plunged in Pleasures, without any real Knowledge of Love, which you alone could inspire me with. I shall not here relate all the Sequel of what I said to her, it would suffice to tell you that I gave Assurances of the most violent Passion, and vowed a Constancy that would stand all Tryals.

I had no sooner made myself easy by this Declaration, than I dreaded her Answer. She neither seemed to be pleased nor angry, but answered me coolly. The Habit, Sir, said she, by which you are accustomed to give Head-long into the first Impulses that you feel for the Woman whom you frequent, makes you believe that you are in Love, perhaps you even imagine that such Discourses

courses ought to be addressed to all the Women, and become a Duty on you as a Member of the polite Part of your Sex. Whatever may be the Case, and without suspecting your Sincerity, if you have any Inclination for me, I advise you not to indulge it; because you would not be happy to love alone, and I would not risk the rendering myself unfortunate by a Return. Ah! what Misfortunes, cried I, do you discover in participating the Sentiments of a Man of Honour, whose sole Happiness centers in you? The greatest, answered she, that can happen to a virtuous Woman. The Man of Honour, whom you mention, and such as you fancy him, is still very remote from being a perfect Lover, and he whose Probity is in greatest Reputation, is never perhaps neither without Reproach nor without Blemish in the Eyes of a Woman, I will not say of nice Perception, but of common Sense. She is often reduced to sigh in secret, her Lover is blameless in the Opinion of the Public, which is just what renders her more unfortunate.

MADAM *Randau* perceiving that I was going to interrupt her, in order to dissipate her Fears; it is needless, added she, to enter into a farther Examination of this Affair, nor to undertake a Refutation of the real or imaginary Dangers to which I should not easily expose myself, though I had my Heart to struggle with, which happily is quiet and undisturbed. Nevertheless, as I have no Reason to complain of you, and that your Character

rafter appears to me to be amiable, I offer you my Friendship, and shall be more flattered with yours than a Sentiment so blind as Love.

I was so struck with the Reasonableness and Solidity of this Discourse, that it augmented my Esteem for this admirable Woman, and of course my Love. When this Passion has once taken Possession of the Heart, our Soul receives no other Sentiments but what serve to fortify it. I found myself easy upon having declared my Passion, and too happy in the Return which she offered me ; it was, it is true, nothing but Friendship ; but that of a Woman lovely and young inspires a Sentiment so tender and delicate that my Gratitude was that of a Lover.

I durst not combat her Reasons, for when one is so sensible of them as she was, the natural Consequence of such a Knowledge will be to support them, and Contradiction is capable of confirming one in an Opinion ; but I proposed to myself to suggest Reasons in the Sequel of our Discourses upon this Subject. A Woman who speaks often of the Dangers of Love is inured to the Hazards, and grows familiar with the Passion ; they who have Love constantly in their Mouths seldom go Scot-free.

I did not fail to go to Madam *Randau's* punctually every Day, my Visits could not be more frequent but were longer than usual,
and

and I passed my whole Time in her House. I still brought my Passion upon the Carpet, the Declaration which I had made of it authorised me. I told her that the Refusal of such Sentiments as I wished she might have, could make no Change in mine ; and since I could not pretend to any thing but Friendship, I conjured her to grant me the most tender ; of which she gave me Assurances, and I ventured to kiss her Hand as a Seal to the Agreement. The Caresses of Friendship are capable of warming the Heart up to Love. Seduced by the Pretence of a pure Attachment, Madam *Randau* made but a faint Resistance. I accustomed her insensibly to hear me talk of my Passion, and waited till Time and my Constancy should inspire her with warmer Sentiments, or rather till she acknowledged my Victory, for I perceived that I daily made new Progresses in her Heart. Love that does not directly give Horror soon becomes contagious.

I passed three Months with her in this Manner, and was astonished at my Constancy, no other Woman had ever retained me so long, neither by her making me happy, or holding out against my Attacks. As nothing but the Senses had till then attached me to Women, Success soon made me cool, and Severity disgusted me, whereas Love and Esteem had fixed me to Madam *Randau*. My whole Study was to please, she appeared to be sensible of it, and nothing was wanting but a Declaration which establishes a Lover's Rights

Rights more than any other Sort of Complaisance.

SHE confessed that my Character, which had at first frightened her, was agreeable, and that I would have been the only Man for whom she could have had an Inclination, were she not armed against Love. I took an Opportunity often to renew such Conversations, and made it my Business to speak of her late Husband, with a View to make her sensible of the Difference of giving her self up to a tender and passionate Lover, or to be subjected to the Caprices of a hated Husband. Madam *Randau* honestly confessed that she never loved her Husband, that the Disproportion of Age and Temper did not permit it; but she scarce would allow but that she had been perfectly happy; and, as I insisted upon the Torments she had undergone from the Jealousy of her Husband, she answered me plainly, that a reasonable Woman would avoid making any Noise upon that Score; that it was her Business to cure Jealousy by her Conduct, and even to pardon it in favour of Love as the Source. In short, she never pronounced one single Word that might throw a Reflection upon the Memory of her Husband. Every thing that added to my Respect augmented my Love. I was almost sure that the Friendship which she owned she had for me was no longer but a Pretence to cover the Love with which I had been so happy as to inspire her, and at last I pushed so hard that she confessed it.

ONE Day that, by her Discourse and Confidence, she gave me Marks of her most tender Friendship. Pardon, Madam, said I, my Temerity, I can no longer doubt but that you have warmer Sentiments for me, than those which Friendship inspires, make me happy by a Confession, which will only serve to attach me more inviolably. She seemed to be put to a Non-plus, and answered me only by a Sigh. I was resolved not to give her Time to recover, but to take the Advantage of this critical Minute. I pressed her anew, threw myself at her Knees, and made the most ardent Protestations. I am very much afraid, said she, to have informed you better of my Sentiments by my Conduct with you, than I can do by Words. I do not intend to conceal my Mind from you. My Heart took a tender Interest in you, before I was aware of it. I am no longer in a Condition to oppose an Inclination, which has dragged me along like a Torrent, and, perhaps, I neither have the Power nor the Will to resist. You now see what Confidence I place in you, may you not give me Cause to repent! I was so charmed to hear what I so ardently desired, that I launched out in the most passionate Transports, swore an eternal Constancy, and being at Liberty to dispose of myself, offered her my Hand as a Pledge of my Sincerity. It is neither your Oaths nor the Laws, said she, that can be Guaranties of your Fidelity. My Felicity would not depend upon being attached to you by Ties, which
are

Mademoiselle de *Richelieu*. 265

are not indissoluble, but because they are forced; your Heart alone can satisfy me. I do not however refuse your Offer, our Ranks and Situations agree, and I could wish to find out new Ties, that would unite me more closely to you. But tho' I am Mistress of my Conduct, I am not so by my Age, to dispose freely of my Hand. Those to whom the Law gives still some Authority over me in that Respect, have other interested Views, which would expose us to Opposition on their Part. I can assure you that I will frustrate their Designs, but we must have Patience for some Time. It is neither proper for you nor me, to come under publick Engagements, but what are absolutely free from all Obstacles; 'till then, I shall have Time to make a Tryal of your Heart, and our Union will be but the more agreeable to us.

I approved of her Proposal, and consented to every thing she pleased. Whatever Desires I had to possess her, I had no other Will but her's. I lived with her in this Hopes, and though there was still the Consummation of the Lover's Bliss wanting, I was in the most happy Situation I ever had experienced in my Life.

I enjoyed with Madam *Randau*, all the Charms of pure Love, by far the happiest State of Lovers. This kind of Love was quite new to me. I was accustomed to

less Esteem and more Liberty. I sometimes attempted to get her to approve of my former Manner of acting with Women. I told her that when once a Person had given their Heart, Favours less precious, though the Pleasure be more brisk and lively, ought not to be denied to a Lover. I presented my Reasons in all the Lights that I thought most alluring, and in short, made Use of all those Maxims and Common-place Arguments, which I had employed so successfully with so many Women. Such Reasonings were lost at that Time; for Madam *Randau* did not conduct herself by the same Principles, as those who had fallen in my Way.

SHE answered me coolly, and sometimes jestingly, that this Custom, however ridiculous it might appear to me, determined the Honour, and even the Happiness of a Woman; that her Heart was as favourable to as Prejudice was against my Interest, which was verified by the common Practice of Men, whose Attachment to Women, who had sacrificed these very Prejudices, was of no Duration. I felt myself under a Necessity of approving Reasons that were extremely displeasing, but there was no standing out against her Ideas, since I could not prevail with her to adopt mine, which, to speak the Truth, were not the justest. Lovers would be too happy in having their Desires kept up by constant Obstacles, since it is as essential to
Hap-

Happiness to preserve, as to satisfy Desires.

WE lived in a delicious Commerce, when a Report was spread of War. There was a Necessity of joining my Regiment, and I felt what it would cost me to part with my Mistress; but nothing could exceed the Grief which this News gave her. In preparing for my Departure I durst not speak to her of it, but I could not hinder myself from shewing my Concern. She took Notice of it, and told me that her Condition was very different from mine; that I had only the common Disquiets of Absence, whereas she was going to be exposed to the most cruel Alarms. She said no more, but her Silence and Tears told me more than she could express. I never saw the Effects of Grief more visibly, and it pierced my Heart. After having in vain endeavoured to comfort her, I retired to give a free Course to my own Grief. I reflected on the chimerical Honour to which I sacrificed the Happiness of my Life. These Ideas threw me into strong Agitations. I was tempted to abandon all, and not to mind what People said, provided I was happy; but I soon blushed to harbour Sentiments so unworthy of my Birth and Profession. I passed the Night in this Struggle between Honour and Love.

I returned next Day, according to Custom, to my Mistress's House, and found her as much afflicted, and more dejected than

the Day before. I could have got the better of my own Grief, but I could not support her's. I forgot all the Sentiments of Honour which till then had supported me, they appeared barbarous, and I resolved to sacrifice them to the Tranquillity of my Mistress. I threw myself at her Feet, and I told her that I could not resist her Tears; that to dry them up I would abandon the Army, and reckon myself happy and content to devote my whole Life to her Service. I did not doubt but this Discourse would restore her Tranquillity. She looked at me some time without saying a Word, and all of a sudden embraced me with Transport, a Thing which she never had done before: I know, said she, the Value of the Sacrifice which you offer me, but I would be unworthy of it were I capable to take the Advantage. Yes, added she, I am proud and happy in the Power which Love gives me over you, but I renounce that Power on this Occasion, and restore you to your Duty, which is making you your own Master. I was so transported with Admiration, that I would have made her this Sacrifice now out of Gratitude, which before was only in Compassion to her Grief. I said all that Love and Respect could inspire, and assured her that she was absolute Mistress of my Fate and of my Conduct. I could have no better Guide than one whose Judgment was so just and Character so respectable.

FROM that Moment Madam *Randau* appeared more easy; or rather I perceived that she

she dissembled her Grief, that it might not contribute to mine. She told me that a Man of my Birth could follow no other Employment but the military, that it was the only and sole Profession of the *French* Nobility, as it was the Origine, and that a Woman who durst attempt to inspire her Lover with other Sentiments, was only worthy to serve his Pleasures, and not to possess his Heart. In fine, the Moment my Honour was concerned, the tender Madam *Randau* disappeared; I found in her a real and firm Friend. However cruel Absence must of Necessity be to our Love, I was charmed to find Sentiments so generous, and my Passion received an additional Force. As I have just now said, Madam *Randau* had in her first Transport taken me in her Arms, this Favour emboldened me to take other Liberties, and though I did not owe but to a certain Forwardness the Caresses which she suffered me to make her, yet methought her Modesty, more than any other Motive, made Opposition. I pressed her to compleat my Happiness, and she conjured me to ask her nothing that was dishonourable. My Heart, said she, of which you are sure, ought to satisfy you, and you are too dear to me to risk the losing you. I perceived that my Eagerness afflicted her, which made me desist that Day, and I left her after receiving Assurances of the most tender Love.

THE Time I had to remain before my Departure was too precious not to give it wholly to Madam *Randau*. I passed every Day from Morning to Night at her House ; our Conversations ran on our Passion, the Rigour of Duties, and the Necessity of performing them. I still found in my Mistress the same tender Sentiments, and the same Charms. Far from being able to remain in the Reserve which she required, I perceived that my Desires grew more ungovernable, and I began to press her anew with Oaths and Protestations, that my Heart was too violently attached to her, that she was become too necessary to the Happiness of my Life, to my own proper Existence, to give her the least Apprehensions of my Inconstancy. She attempted to bring me back to that Respect which distinguishes true from counterfeit Love, but mine was too violent to be retained. I prayed, pressed, and to the Vivacity of Sollicitations and Oaths joined Attempts ; I clasped her in my Arms, she blushed, sighed, looked languishing, dropt a tender Tear, but Love took my Part, and I conquered. To have a Notion of my Happiness, without having felt the Power and Force of Passion, is impossible. Though my whole Life had been a continued Scene of Gallantry, and that I had often, very often, all the Satisfaction that Women could give me, yet the Pleasure I had now enjoyed was quite new to me, and it is Love alone

alone that constitutes the Value. To the Fire of my Desires did not succeed that mortifying Disgust which is the Fate of common Lovers. My Soul still enjoyed the Bliss, and still remained in Raptures.

ATTACHED by Love, fixed by Pleasure, Madam *Randau* appeared more lovely than before. I loaded her with Kisses. Her Mouth, her Eyes, in short, her whole Person was the Object of my Caresses, and the Source of my Transports: A voluptuous Intoxication, if I may be allowed the Expression, seized on all my Senses. She was scarce come to be a little Calm again when I observed that Floods of Tears burst from her Eyes. Her Grief passed into my very Soul, for my Sentiments were Slaves to hers. I looked upon my self as Criminal. I trembled at the Thoughts of having made my self odious to her, and I begged on my Knees that she would not hate me. Alas! answered she, have I the Power to hate you? but I foresee that I shall lose you. Ah! can I ever pardon my self? I left nothing unsaid to dissipate her Fears, which I found injurious to me, and I assured her of an inviolable Constancy, protesting in the most solemn manner, that I was ready when ever she pleased, to ratify by the Seal of the Law, and of the publick Faith, the Ties formed by Love. The Ardour of my Caresses were such Proofs of my Oaths and Intensions, that she became calm, and with a tender Embrace told me, that she should never be sorry for having sacrificed all
to

to my Desires, so long as she was assured of my Heart, of which the Fidelity or Inconstancy would render her the most happy or most wretched of her Sex. My Oaths, Transports, and my Love at last dissipated all her Fears, I obtained my Pardon, and we sealed it with Caresses, which a Moment before had made me guilty, and which become equally innocent and delicious when two Lovers share them. Happy State in which satisfied Desires are reproduced by themselves ! I passed some Days with my adored Mistress in Pleasures that cannot be expressed, but at last there was a Necessity to part, and our Separation was the more cruel, the more happy we thought our selves in being together.

THE Report of a War that had been industriously spread, only served to consolidate the Peace, and the Campaign was made in a Peaceful Camp.

I returned to *Paris* more amorous than when I left it, and in the Resolution of pressing my Marriage. Attached by Love, Pleasure and Gratitude, I would have gladly found out new Ties to unite us more closely than by the common Method.

OUR first Meeting was attended with Transports, which cannot be conceived but by those who have been in the same Case. I passed a whole Year in an uninterrupted Career of Pleasures, of which Love was the
Source

Source, and they added to its Perfection. I visited no body but my dear Mistress, she was all in all to me, and without her every Thing was foreign and indifferent in my Eyes. Why should a Situation so happy and delicious be subject to change? It is not an unalterable Youth which I would desire, because in itself lies the Source of Inconstancy. I do not aspire to change the Disposition of human Nature, but our Hearts ought to be more perfect, the Enjoyment of Souls perpetual.

THE Foundation of my Happiness was still the same, and yet it altered, since I began to be less sensible of it. The Pleasures which had formerly dragged me along with so much Violence, were become odious to me, when they made the least Attempt to decoy me from the Object of all my Wishes. Insensibly I could look on them with less Horror; they appeared necessary to prevent the Commerce of Love's becoming tasteless and languid; and Constancy, to be sure, is ripe for an alteration when we once begin to lay it under Rules and Directions. If I did not search after my old Companions in Pleasures, who were dispersed, I thought, at least, that I ought to live in Society, *Paris* abounds, we are under no Obligation to court Pleasures, it suffices not to shun them. I became less assiduous in my Visits to *Madam Randau*, that is, I went not every Day, or at least my Visits were not so long, which supposes that they began to appear tedious to me. The Taste which I formerly had for Plays, and which

Madam

Madam *Randau* had suspended, because she seldom went to them, and that I had no Pleasure but where she was, revived in me, and I humoured it. I generally met with some of my Friends there who engaged me to sup with them. The first Time that I failed to go to my Mistress's, where I always supped, she was extremely uneasy and was afraid that some Accident had happened. Next Morning she sent to enquire about me, I went directly to see her, and received some tender Reproaches, which I did not think I had deserved, nevertheless I found my self under some Perplexity, and I felt my Cheeks glowing. There must be within our selves a Sentiment more penetrating than the Mind itself, and absolves or condemns us with an Equity founded on Knowledge, so that there is, if I may say so, a Sagacity of Heart, which is the Measure of our Sensibility.

SOME Days after I was again engaged to Supper, the first Reproaches made me afraid to accost her, I dreaded a new Attack, and found my self agreeably disapointed, for she said not a Word. Nevertheless my Absences became more frequent, and I never went to sup with her without feeling the Checks of Remorse, and we seldom feel without deserving them ; when we strictly examine our selves, the Motives are but too visible. In Effect, Madam *Randau* was almost continually alone. As I had insinuated that I found nothing so insupportable as those Visits which constrain the Carresses and tender Effusion of
Lovers

Lovers, she had by Degrees got rid of the few that visited her before she knew me, consequently I ought to have shared a Solitude to which she reduced herself to please me. After the first gentle Reprimand she made no Complaints, but I observed that her Mind was less free, and her Humour inclined to Melancholy. I sometimes asked the Reason, and she constantly answered that nothing ailed her; and as I insisted asking her if she had any Subject of Complaint against me, she assured me that she was perfectly content, and gave me Proofs of Affection capable to deceive me. Incouraged, or rather deceiving my self upon my Innocence, I gave more and more into my old Trade of Life. I was however uneasy to see Madam *Randau* more serious with me, though not less tender; I reproached my self as the Cause, this afflicted me, and though she did not in the least constrain me, I found my self pinched and the Cause lay in the Remorses which I felt within; but an habitual Sinning soon deadens the Sting. The Facility, or rather Goodness of Madam *Randau*, contributed to my Blindness, or more justly speaking, Libertinism. When I was some Days without seeing her, I attempted to make Excuses, but she spared me the Trouble, by telling me that she was charmed I found Opportunities of diverting my self, that a Man could not confine himself to a perpetual Solitude, which was suitable to a Woman, and whatever desire she might have to be with me, my Pleasure, said she, was every Thing to her.

THESE

THESE Sentiments were the more agreeable that they left me at large ; Madam *Randau* became the dearer to me upon that very Account, and not more necessary. It is implanted in our Natures to cherish those who overlook our Faults, and more those who excuse them. Whatever Complaisance she had for my Extravagancies I could not impose upon myself so far as to believe that my Presence did not give her Pleasure. I sometimes formed a Design not to stir from her House for several Days, and to do out of Gratitude what I formerly did with so much Passion, and what would have been impossible for me not to have done. The Time bestowed on Duty appears always long. Weariness got the better of me against my Will. It seemed that Madam *Randau* perceived it before I did myself. She was the first that put me upon leaving her, to go in search of Pleasures more to my Taste, she did not tell me so, but furnished me Pretences which I should not perhaps have thought of, and which I desired. I was at a Loss how to reconcile her Penetration in doing what she thought agreeable to me unasked, with her Blindness on the Wrongs which I did her.

MADAM *Randau* was the only Person whom I loved, and she had no Rival. I imagined that nothing would be wanting to my Heart, and that our Commerce would become as brisk and lively as ever, if she would keep a little more Company. I proposed

posed it to her, and having no other Will but mine, she readily consented: We lived some Time upon this Footing, and I found it agreeable. Lovers who have thrown out the first Fire of their Passion are charmed to have the *tete a tetes* shortned. If my Pleasures were not lively as they had been, at least, I desired no others.

THIS Tranquillity was of a short Duration, Inconstancy was my Predominant, I became false. There are Women who have no other View in their coaxing and Inticements but to engage a Lover; sometimes it is a simple Habit of Coquetry. There are others who would be insensible of the Pleasure of being attached to a Man if they did not carry him off from a Mistress. I found one of this Character, and unluckily she pleased me. My Correspondence with Madam Randau was known; an Intrigue may be secret, but there is none entirely unknown. Madam Pely resolved to be Madam Randau's Rival, and succeeded but too well.

IMAGINE to yourselves a whimsical, lively, heedless little Creature, speaking before she thinks, and void of Reflection, and you have the Picture of my new Mistress; but her Youth, joined to a Habit or rather Taste for Pleasure and Coquetry, supplied the Want of Wit, and qualified her for the Business of Gallantry. To say that I preferred her to Madam Randau, to whom she was inferior in all Respects, would be flying in the Face of

Truth; she had nothing in her Favour but Novelty. My Heart was always faithful to its first Engagements, but I resolved to amuse myself with Madam *Pely*, she deserved nothing else, and seemed to require no more.

SHE had for Husband a Man rich, who kept a good House, and did not trouble himself much about his Wife's Conduct, provided she brought Company to the House. These sort of Houses seldom want Guests good or bad. I was introduced by a Friend of mine, who had no other Title to present me but that his Acquaintance with the Family had been of eight Days standing. I supped there several Times. The Vivacity of Madam *Pely* diverted me: She appeared proper to relax my Spirits, on which the Seriousness of Madam *Randau* often brought a Lowness. Real Passions and true Happiness find their Account in the Character of Madam *Randau*, but a transient Gallantry requires more Gaiety.

THE little *Pely* who had been informed of my Correspondence with Madam *Randau* spoke to me of her as the Women generally speak of one another, that is, she praised her Person and Wit with all the *buts* and *ifs* usual on such Occasions. I answered as became me, rendering Justice to Madam *Randau*, adding that there never had had been between her and me but an Intimacy as Friends, which was saying plainly enough that I was
not

not engaged. This Conversation served me for a Declaration ; without Love I offered my Heart to the little Woman, and she accepted of it in the same Terms.

SHE thought her Charms had driven Madam *Randau* far from my Heart ; as for me, I knew that I only filled up the Place of Another, whose Time was out. I was directly acknowledged in the Society, as the Lover in Favour, that is, for the Master of the House.

I enjoyed all the Prerogatives of my new Dignity, of which the Importunities are no small Part. I could, it is true, bring every Body I pleased to the House, but then, I was obliged to be at the Head of all the Parties which were more noisy than diverting.

It was almost impossible but that I should be dragged along by this Torrent, and that I could observe the Rules, at least, of Decency with Madam *Randau*, which afflicted me, I did not love her with the same Vivacity as I had before ; but, in short, I loved none but her, and she was as necessary to my Heart as *Pely* was to my Dissipation.

THE most incommodious Situation for a Man of Honour is not to be able to make his Heart and his Conduct go hand in hand. My Pain still augmented when I saw Madam *Randau*. I found her sometimes under a

Dejection which pierced my very Heart. She suffered my Caresses but that was all. I could not perceive that her Heart was changed, she only seemed to be afraid of importuning me. When I had left her, her Image followed me and embittered all my Pleasures. I was a hundred Times ready to abandon *Pely* and never more to leave her. My Condition might be indeed languishing, but at least it would not have been tormented with Remorse. What compleated my Disquiet was the Dread that she should be informed of my Intrigue with Madam *Pely*, whom I thought I loved, for Pleasure has some little Resemblance or rather imitates Love.

NOT but that I rendered exact Justice to one and the other; my Mind was juster than my Heart. I amused myself with Madam *Pely*, but I had no Confidence in her; whereas nothing happened in the Way of my Fortune or Affairs but what I went directly to impart to Madam *Randau*, and to ask her Advice. I found her always the same, tender, discreet, knowing; alas! I was not worthy of her. In these Occasions my Love rekindled with Violence, but it soon after languished. The Flames of Love once extinguished produce no more Conflagrations. I thought that in order to be at Peace with myself, my Visits ought not to be so frequent to Madam *Randau*, and I became more criminal to hush my Remorses. Proud of having found out this villainous Expedient I began to put it in Execution, and the few Visits I made

made her were no longer but a Duty which I performed with Ceremony and great Constraint.

By this Time, Madam *Randau* had ordered Matters so, that she was in a Condition to join with me in Wedlock, but I was now very easy about it. I did not doubt but she would remind me of a Promise, on which depended her Happiness, and I dreaded the Summons. She did not however make the least Insinuation that Way, and, no doubt, expected that I should speak of it. I took the Advantage of her Delicacy that I might have none myself, and I made it my Study to avoid every Thing that might bring it to her Remembrance, or afford her an Opportunity of claiming my Promise; but I had no Occasion for such Precautions, for she never opened her Mouth upon the Subject, nor made me the least Reproach of seeing her so seldom.

On the other Hand, Madam *Pely*, more vain than jealous, since there was no true Love between her and me, pretended that she suspected my friendly Intimacy with Madam *Randau*, and therefore commanded me not to see her at all, which I had the Baseness to promise. I was in the most cruel Situation. The Happiness or Misery of Life depends more on these little Interests apparently frivolous, than on Affairs of the greatest Importance. More Sincerity or Equity

would have saved me from a great Deal of Trouble.

I was thus situated when one of my Relations, who lived commonly at a Country Seat not far from *Paris*, came to sollicite an Affair at Court. I employed myself with such Success, that it was soon terminated to his Satisfaction. Before he returned to the Country, he invited me to a Supper, to which I consented. Upon my coming in he told me, with an Air of Satisfaction, that he had taken Care to have Company that would be agreeable to me; that one of his principal Attentions was to match Persons according to Rules of Proportion, and enlarged upon Maxims of good Breeding; he was still upon the Praises of his rare Prudence, when I saw Madam *Pely* enter, which gave me great Joy, and I began already to think, that my Kinsman, for a Country Squire, had judged well; but this Pleasure was of a short Duration; for a Moment after, Word was brought that Madam *Randau* was just coming in. My cursed Cousin had informed himself about the Persons whom I most frequently visited, and had not failed to invite them.

I never in my Life was in such a cruel Situation. I could not avoid behaving in a Manner agreeable to the Conduct which I held in private with the one and the other. The Superiority of Madam *Randau's* Rank over her Rival authorised me to
render

render to the former all the Honours of Preference, but the Devors of the Heart are of a very different Nature from those which are due to Rank, and they had both an equal Claim to these. Besides, the little *Pely* did not in the least doubt but that Love ought to settle the whole Affair, and would make me jump over all the Rules of Decorum, and flattered herself with an absolute Triumph over her Rival, and before her Face. I made a wrong Calculation in imagining that I could impose upon a Creature of her weak Understanding, so far as to make her believe my attentions for *Madam Randau* were owing to Birth and Friendship. I deceived myself; all the Women have Wit in these Occasions, and in Matters of this Kind Vanity enlightens them, and, which is worse, renders them unjust. The greatest Difficulty was to conceal my Intrigue with *Pely* from *Madam Randau*. Naturally speaking, I ought not to have so much Familiarity with a Woman whom I had never spoke of as an Acquaintance. It must be owned that my Case was puzzling; People of Sense will feel it better than Fools.

I was planted at Table between the two Rivals. *Madam Pely*, by her Looks and Actions, made it very plain that she and I were in the Terms of Lovers, and took Liberties very inconsistent with Women of Virtue. *Madam Randau* did not seem to take the least Notice of her Behaviour, which charmed me;
and

and the little *Pely* was so piqued at it, that it only served to make her more giddy-headed. I was as it were in the Stocks, when to compleat the Affair, the Master of the House put me in Mind, before the whole Company, of a transient Promise that I had made to go and see him at his Country House, and at the same Time invited all those that were at the Table, being desirous, said he, to reassemble so good Company. He addressed himself in the first Place to Madam *Randau* who did not absolutely refuse till she heard my Answer, Madam *Pely* made it for me, and approved much of the Proposal, and the Country Jaunt was fixed to the Day after the next. I was, you may believe, pretty much at a Loss when I went next Day to Madam *Randau's*. I could not account for her Blindness, which was too great not to give me Suspicion. I looked upon it as an Effect of her Prudence, and did not doubt but that she reserved for a private Explication what she had dissembled in Publick.

I found no Change in the Manner of my Reception. I believed she was deceived and had not the least Suspicion of my Intrigue with Madam *Pely*. The country Dinner I was afraid of, but considered on the other Hand, that having succeeded in deceiving her at Supper, I might do the same in the Country, and therefore pressed her to go. She resisted so strongly for a long Time that I was astonished, but at last consented. I Went by my self next Day to avoid being with one or
other

other of these two Rivals. The Dinner in the Country passed as the Supper in Town, that is, Madam *Randau* was very serious and Madam *Pely* very heedless. The Tranquillity of the Former rendered me so confident, and I thought her so blind that I believed I had no more Measures to keep; and Pleasure got so far the better of Esteem that I gave into all the Caprices of Madam *Pely*, who seemed to be so easy about Madam *Randau*, that she did not in the least constrain her self in her Presence. When I came to reflect upon my past Conduct, I felt how important it was for a Man of Honour to be careful in chusing the Object of his Attachment, upon which our Virtues or Vices depend; with this Difference, that we sometimes content ourselves, with esteeming the Virtues, whereas we always share in the Follies.

I very much neglected Madam *Randau*, though the rest of the Company did her the Justice due to her Merit. Madam *Pely* and I were so guardless in our Behaviour that the least clear Sighted of the Company could not but perceive our Commerce, which at last was discovered by Madam *Randau* her self to our very great Confusion.

MADAM *Pely* and I had retired to a Part of the Wood very little frequented, where we toyed with a Liberty which required no Witness. The Place, the Opportunity, and Passion seduced us, and we pushed it as far as it could go, when behold, Madam *Randau*,
who

who sought out Solitude, was by Chance conducted to the very Place where we were, and found us in a Situation by no Means Equivocal. She no sooner perceived us than she retired with Precipitation, but could not do it so but that we were convinced nothing had escaped her.

It is impossible to paint the Surprise and Grief with which we were seized. We remained some Time immoveable and without opening our Mouths. I was under the most terrible Confusion and Despair, that the very Person, whom I so basely wronged, should have been a Witness of my Infidelity, she who deserved it so little, and whom I thought I had with Impunity deceived till then. My Heart was torn in Pieces. Madam *Poly* (who did not see into my Breast, and who could not imagine that a Man, who for the most part is only guided by Pleasure and Vanity, could on such an Occasion be under any Concern for himself) thought that the whole Misfortune lay at her Door. She had been surprized by a Woman whom she looked upon as a Rival offended; besides, she knew her Sex, of whom she judged by herself, and was sensible that a Woman has no Occasion for Rivalry to make a bad Use of such a Secret. She fretted with Rage and Grief, and told me that she would return directly to *Paris*, without shewing her Face to any of the Company.

I employed all the Arguments I could think of to calm her, though I had myself as great Occasion for a Comforter as she. I removed her Fears with regard to Madam *Randau*'s Probity. In Effect, I dreaded her Resentment against me, but I was certain of her Discretion, and I made Madam *Pely* sensible that our Departure would look worse than all that Madam *Randau* could say.

WE returned to the Castle with the Dread and Dejection of two Criminals. Before Madam *Randau* had given my Heart a new Form, I should have perhaps appeared with an Air of Triumph. By the Time we returned our Company was arrived, and Supper being ready nothing remained but to take our Places at Table. Madam *Pely* pretended Indisposition, and that she had Occasion for Rest. The Master of the House thought himself obliged in good Manners to press her to partake of the Supper; and though she would have wished to be by herself, as Trouble and Fear were then the Principles or Influencers of all her Actions, she durst not refuse. Madam *Randau*, who knew the Cause of this pretended Indisposition, spared no Pains to hearten her, and gave her so evident Testimonies of Complaisance, that nothing but its Excess could discover the Motives, viz. her generous Compassion, which was indeed far above Madam *Pely*'s Reach of Comprehension. She neither had that Delicacy of Heart, nor Penetration of Mind capable to find out so un-

uncommon Principles of Generosity and Probity, Madam *Pely* took Courage, and believed that her Rival had perceived nothing; for she could not suppose it possible for a Woman not to make a bad Use of such an Advantage. Her Gaiety returned with her Health, and before Supper was at an End she was as lively and as giddy as ever she had been, and Madam *Randau* was charmed that her Rival was upon a wrong Scent.

I judged differently of the Matter. Every thing that bore the Character of Virtue made me find out Madam *Randau*. She was more affected with the Pleasure of preventing her Rival's Confusion than she would have been with her Acknowledgments, which Madam *Pely* could not have made but at the Expence of her Happiness, and with the utmost Confusion.

I durst not look at Madam *Randau*, and I dreaded still more to be alone with her. I did not think proper to draw Madam *Pely* out of her Error; but I was very impatient to be at *Paris*, to which we returned next Day.

MADAM *Randau*'s Conduct upon this Occasion, had opened my Eyes. I conceived, that if she had not hitherto the Proofs which I had now given her of my Infidelity, she had, at least, very much suspected it. I saw clearly the Cause of her Melancholy and Reserve with me, but I could not conceive what

what had hindered her to fall out with me. I made no Doubt but she delayed 'till I was fully convicted, and I concluded that, upon my first Appearance, I should be dismissed, of which the very Thoughts made me almost delirious. It is true, I had no more that Vivacity, that Transport of Passion, which had first rendered me quite indifferent, or rather had made me look upon every other Object with Contempt. My Love became more calm, and had united itself to the most tender Friendship. The Inconstancy which I had in my Mind, more than in my Heart, the Habit of Intriguing, which I had contracted from a long Experience, made me always look for new Amusements in the Way of Gallantry, but I really loved none but Madam Randau; I perceived that I could not be happy without her, and I could not think without trembling, that I was going to be banished for ever from her Presence.

I would have made a Sacrifice of Madam Pely, and of all the Women in the World, to have obtained my Pardon. I resolved to go and see her, to confess my Faults, to express my Remorse, and to endeavour to soften her; too happy to accept any Conditions that she would be pleased to prescribe.

I went to her House, loaded with all these Fears, and accosted her trembling. She received me with a serious Air, in which,

however, I could observe no Marks of Indignation, and yet I durst not open my Mouth. In fine after a thousand Combates which I felt within me, I told her that I came to throw myself at her Feet as a Criminal, to ask Pardon, of which I was unworthy. She pitied my Condition, and interrupted my going on in a Discourse which she judged very mortifying to me.

I see, said she, you begin to know your Faults, but perhaps some of them escape you, and which were the most sensible to me. You know that I have sacrificed all to you, do not imagine that the Senses seduced me. Not but that I shared in your Pleasure, but Love alone determined me. I never had any other Desire, but that of making you happy. It is not to your Oaths that I surrendered; they indeed engaged your Honour, but they are no Tie upon Hearts, and I only consulted mine. You were not the less obliged to fulfil them; nevertheless, I saw how much you was afraid that I should put you in mind of them, but I have not done it. I should have perhaps exposed you to the Height of Ungentlemanly Behaviour, in refusing my Hand, or if Honour had made you accept of it, I should have been but still the more unfortunate. Your Engagement would have but aggravated your Faults, and I should have at last become odious to you.

AT

AT this Word I interrupted Madam Randau, and throwing myself at her Feet, gave the most lively and sincere Marks of Repentance. I requested her to give me the glorious Title of Husband, and swore an eternal Fidelity. It is now too late, said she, I believe your Offers and Protestations to be sincere in this Moment, but you promise more than you can perform. You have betrayed me once, you will do it again; it is possible that it may be otherwise, but it is without Example that one is but once unfaithful. There was a Time when I could have flattered myself with the Thoughts of your Constancy; you had been plunged in Gallantries and Intrigues without real Love; and as I thought you sincere in your Attachment to me, I flattered myself with the Hopes of your being fixed; but since you have broke through that, nothing is capable to do it. You might perhaps observe Decorum, but that will never supply the Want of Love. I did not observe your Indifference and Coldness for me without the most bitter Grief. I felt before you did yourself the first Moment of your Inconstancy; a Woman in Love is clear-sighted. I have concealed my Pains from you as much as possibly I could. I disssembled my Grief, Complaints and Reproaches seldom reclaim. I would have afflicted you to no Purpose, you was only reserved with me, and if I had appeared to you to be more penetrating, I would have perhaps obliged you to have Recourse to False-

hood to deceive me. I see that Constancy is not in the Power of Men, and their Educations renders Infidelity necessary to them. Their Attachment depends on the Vivacity of their Desires; when the Enjoyment, when the Confidence of a Woman who is not credulous but because she loves, have extinguished them, it is neither Esteem nor even Love that rekindles them, but the Novelty of a new Object. Besides, Prejudice encourages Men to Infidelity. Their Honour is not touched, their Vanity is flattered, and Custom authorizes them.

IF I have any Consolation, it is, that I have preserved your Esteem, and I durst even say, your Love, or at least, all the Tenderness of which your Heart is still capable. You have not been so unfaithful to me, as you perhaps could have wished, for after all, it is a terrible Thing to have ones Heart to struggle with, and you have undergone Remorses from which you would have been exempted in ceasing to love me. I wholly possess your Heart; I have done nothing to lose it, and those whom you prefer to me will not perhaps be worthy of it, or at least it will not depend upon you to love them.

JUDGE at present if it be fit for me to accept of your hand, I who could not be happy if I did not find, at the same time, in my Husband, a Lover and a Friend. It is of this last Title that I am fondest. I neither
will,

will, ought, nor can pretend to any other. I had Interest and Time enough to study you. Your Heart is good and faithful, but your Mind is wavering, and Dissipation is your Predominant. Follow your Humour and Taste ; enjoy Mistresses ; I shall be satisfied with the Quality of your Friend. It is so uncommon that Friendship survives or succeeds to Love ! Let others share in your Pleasures ; I shall enjoy all your Confidence. I shall have no Rival in my Sentiments, and I have too much Delicacy and Pride to allow any Mortal to share with me in your Possession. While I had Hopes of reclaiming you, I was blind to your Ramblings ; the Persuasion you was under of appearing innocent in my Eyes, left you at Liberty to return to your Duty, and be no more guilty. Such a Conduct now on my Part would no longer impose upon you, and would only serve to render me contemptible.

I was so struck with the Solidity of Madam Randau's Discourse, that my first Love re-kindled for her with all the Force it ever had when at the highest. My Design was not to sacrifice Madam Pely to her but as a Condition of our Reconciliation, and at this instant I would have sacrificed the whole Universe. I begged her on my Knees to resume her first Sentiments for me, and to accept of my Hand and Faith as a Pledge of mine. All my Protestations were in vain. I found her equally tender in Friendship and firm in her Resolution. I lived thus two Months with

her, without leaving her a Moment, without seeing any other Woman, and without gaining any thing by my Perseverance.

In fine, despairing to prevail with her, and having no Right to condemn her, I discontinued pressing her. I submitted to her Orders, and fell to my old Trade. Madam *Randau* who took Notice of it, was the first who spoke of it; and I assured her that as soon as she pleased I would abandon all for her. I visited her as assiduously as ever, because her Presence did not constrain me, and that I was no longer under an Obligation to conceal my Intrigues and Remorses from her.

SHE entertained me upon the Subject of my Mistresses, drew their Pictures, and gave me Lessons for my Conduct. I admired the Justness and Solidity of her Understanding. I was never guilty of an Infidelity (if it may be so called, considering the singular Manner in which I lived with her) that did not make me discover new Qualities and new Charms in her Mind and Judgment, and that did not serve to attach me more and more to her.

THE Commerce between her and me was certainly of a new kind. I was sometimes afraid lest it should strike at the Sentiments which she protested she always would have for me. Nothing could have rendered me more unhappy, for her Heart was more precious to me than all my Pleasures.

THE

THE Indulgence, said I to her, that you have for all my transient Intrigues, cannot proceed but from your Indifference. It is, no doubt, whimsical enough that Jealousy should spring from me ; but, in short, I am smitten that Way, because I see so little of it about you. If you judge me innocent, you would not think it any great Crime in you to listen to another Lover. Madam *Randau* could not hinder herself from laughing at my Jealousy.

IT would not be, answered she, your Conduct which ought to make me scrupulous, if I had Complaisances for any other than yourself, but you may may be perfectly easy upon that Score. Nothing equalled my Happiness when I was the only Object of your Desires, but I still prefer keeping your Heart by my Indulgence, than to drive you away by a Severity, whereof the Effect would particularly fall upon myself. Were I to follow your Example, you could not reasonably blame me. Nature has given no other Rights to Men than what she has bestowed on our Sex, and yet you would have the double Injustice of condemning in me what you pardon in yourself. What ought principally to make you easy in this Respect, is, that the Women, with more Tenderness in the Heart than the Men, have not so strong Desires.

THE

THE Injurious Reproaches thrown out against us, unjust in themselves, rather owe their Source to Men without Probity, and mal-traited by Women, than to Lovers who have Favours bestowed on them. As for me, I confess that I have no great Relish for sensual Pleasures; I never should have known them but for Love, and I might add that the Senses require nothing but what People are accustomed to give them, and that even the Men are often more employed in exciting than in gratifying them. Therefore be assured of my Fedelity, though you have no Right to require it. You are less happy than I, and I have more Pleasure in loving you, than you can find in your Inconstancy.

My Admiration and Respect for Madam *Randau*, augmented daily, her Sentiments made me ashamed of mine, but did not reclaim me. It was not in Reason's Power to cure me of my Errors, but it was reserved that my distaste for Women should be owing to the very Women themselves. In a very little time I began to think that there was nothing animating in their Commerce. Their Figure, their Graces, even their Failings were no new Thing to me, and I could find no Mistress but who resembled some one or other of the Former. so that the whole Sex was but as one Woman for whom my Taste was blunted, and what is singular, Madam *Randau* acquired new Charms in my Eyes. Her Person eclipsed all that I had seen, and I could not conceive how I had been so blind not to prefer her before all the

the Women I ever saw. Custom that lessens the Value of Beauty, adds to the Character, and only serves to attach us. Besides, my inconstancy had given Madam *Randau* an Opportunity of displaying Virtues which I believed above the Reach of human Nature, and which shined with Splendor by my Injustice.

MADAM *Randau* resumed all her Power over my Heart, or rather, it was no longer those violent and tumultuous Impulses which had at first dragged me like a Torrent towards her, and which in the Sequel became the Source of my Errors. It was no longer an impetuous Intoxication of the Senses, a Sentiment more tender, more calm, and more delightful filled my Soul, and placed a Tranquility in it, which added still to my Happiness in leaving me the Liberty to feel it.

I had never altogether left off going to Madam *Randau's*. My Visits which I had suspended for some Time, when I designed to conceal my Infidelities from her, became more frequent the Moment I was under no Constraint, and in a very little Time I was never easy but at her House. Insensibly, and without my perceiving it distinctly, I became weary of a World which a heedless and dissipated Youth had made me fondly Court,

It was Madam *Randau* that made me first take Notice of it. I agreed that it was so, and laid hold of this Occasion to renew my Instances for what she had so often refused. I
consent

consent now to our Marriage, said she, to which I have no more Objections that are valid. I am no longer afraid of losing you, but you must allow it to be pretty singular, that to take a Husband, I was obliged to wait till he was quite tired of Love : This is however what renders me sure of your Heart. It is not my Lover whom I marry ; It is a Friend with whom I unite myself, and whose tender Esteem is more precious in my Eyes than all the Transports of a blind Passion.

As our Marriage had no Occasion for any other Preparations but our own Consent, it was soon concluded. It was no longer the Pleasures of Love that we sought after ; a Sentiment more delicate reigned in my Heart. I was charmed that I had secured to myself the Possession of what was dearest to me upon Earth, and to be certain of passing my Days with Madam *Randau*, in whom I found the same Sentiments. The World, far from being necessary to our Happiness, could not but importune us. I proposed that we should go and pass some Time at my Country Seat. She jumped at the Proposal, assuring me that I was all in all to her, and that the Places where she could enjoy my Company with most Tranquility, should always be preferred by her. It is almost a Year since we left *Paris*, and have no desire to return, ah ! what Business have we there ? The World which we now despise would look upon us as ridiculous. We become more and more fond of Retirement. I find the whole Universe with my Wife who

is

is my Friend, she is all that my Heart wants, and she desires nothing but to pass her Life with me. We enjoy that Union of Hearts which is the Fruit and Principle of Virtue. What attaches me the more to my Spouse is, because I am indebted to her for this precious Virtue; and she no doubt cherishes me as her own Workmanship. I live content, since I am persuaded that my Condition is the most happy to which a Man of Honour can aspire.

You will perhaps be surpriz'd, Gentlemen, to see People so fond of Retirement, as I have represented my Wife and me, leave their Solitude and come to visit a foreign Country, but I must let you know that our being in *England* is more owing to Necessity than Curiosity; my Spouse has been of late troubled with Pains in her Stomach, and a sort of an Indigestion, for which our Physicians thought a little of the Sea Air and Sicknes, which is mostly the Case of People unaccustomed to that Element, might be beneficial, and as we intended to take a Trip some where or other by Sea, I propos'd our passing over to this Country, to which she readily agreed, and I thought it would be silly to return without seeing the Capital, as it was but a Days Journey from the Place where we landed; and we both love the Country and the Humour of the Quality so well, that our Stay has been longer than we first intended. Here the Count left of speaking, and we were charmed with his Story, which indeed set the Passions and sensual Appetites in a glaring Light, but
still

still more the Beauties of Virtue, which at last prevailed, and forced Diffipation to hide her Head. A little after the Count had finished his Narration, the Countess returned, and I could observe she blushed upon her entering; Come, Madam said he, I have told these Gentlemen all my Follies, and mine too I suppose, answered she, looking down. You guilty of Follies, cried he with a Warmth that flowed from his Heart, Calumny or the blackest Malice dares not to take the least Freedom with your Character, and if you granted me Favours, were they not in Consequence of all the Oaths and Vows that can be called binding; and I look upon the joining Hands before a Priest to be only the ceremonial Part of Marriage, which the Looseness of Mankind and their natural Tendency to change renders necessary, in order to secure Women and Children from the Injustices of bad Husbands and unnatural Fathers. The Event, said the Countess, extenuates, in some Measure, my Crime; but still it was one, and I must conclude, from my own Experience, that the most virtuous Woman has unguarded Moments, in which a Lover, to whom she has given her Heart, may prevail: Passion is uppermost, and Reason is not allowed to come to her Assistance. But the Example of many silly Women, who have been ruined and undone by a Change in their Lovers, ought to make every Woman check all such irregular Desires either in the Man or in her self, which last are more irresistible than the former, and make her an easy Conquest: This was perhaps

haps but too much my Case, though I then thought otherwise, and that what I did was more to oblige the Man I loved than my self.

THIS Reasoning, as well as the Cause of it, was a thing quite new to *Arabella* and me, and though we believed her to be a virtuous Woman in the Main, yet we could not but think, that she had committed a *Faux-pas*, which made us only say in general, that their Adventure was singular and extraordinary. To condemn her Complaisance for her Lover, would have looked very odd in young Fellows as she imagined us, and to approve of it, was flying in the Face of Conscience, and acting in direct Opposition to our Sentiments.

IN Order to change the Conversation, I made Haste to ask the Count if he had been at any Plays since he came to *London*, and what was his Opinion of the English Stage? Were I to tell you my real Opinion of all modern Stages, said he, you would think me perhaps ridiculous, and a meer Bigot. When I was young I made myself so far Master of the *English*, as to be able to read their Dramatick Writings, which are some of them full of Wit, but many of them so smutty, that the Play Houses in *London* may be justly said to be the Sources of Corruption: It is here the Women learn not to be frighted at an Intrigue, but rather are put in the Way to carry them on
Vol. III. C c successfully:

successfully: here young People are made familiar with Vice, which is always represented as a thing indifferent, and never as Vice; they swear, game, drink, debauch Women, and fight; the Man of Honour, as well as the rest, without Distinction, does all this, or rather, the Play has no Man of Honesty or Honour in it, who can be distinguished by such a Character; all that can be said of him is, *that he is more genteelly wicked than the rest.*

COMEDY it is true, is a Picture of Life, and these Things might be represented in it; but it is no less true, that Painting of Manners ought to have this Advantage, that it may either reject or approve; and every Poet that is ignorant of this, or neglects it, has no great Skill, or at least, has no great Esteem for Virtue; so that if the *English* Poets attack the Faults of their Countrymen, they are so very singular and extravagant, that they were known scarce any where but on the Stage, consequently, the *English* Comedy is of no Benefit to Mankind.

As for the Pleasure these Diversions give, it can only be to those who have a vicious Taste, for the Poets take no Care to imitate Nature, they do not suit their Language to the Persons that speak; the Poet is always heard above the Actor, and there seldom fails to be Abundance of Swearing, idle Stories, and foolish Comparisons, the last usually pleasing more than any thing else.
How

How wretchedly has one of their Poets metamorphosed the Miser of *Moliere*, and reflected on his Works, notwithstanding he had stolen the best part of his Plays from him, reciting that Passage in *Moliere*, where *Frosine* applauds the Frugality of *Mariacine*, and would persuade *Harpagon*, that she is Portion enough of herself; *Harpagon* replies, that such Things are not solid, and that he would be glad to touch something; *Frosine* answers, you shall touch enough, and hastens to tell him, that there is a certain Country, where his Mistress has an Estate that he will be Master of: But the *English* Poet cannot part with this Business of touching so soon: In *Shadwell's* Performance *Frosine* answers, Touch! How? You shall certainly touch her, and you shall touch every where, and as much as you please, she is a pretty Creature to touch, there is a Touch for you. By this and some other Alterations of the like Nature, you may judge what our *French* Comedian has gained by this Gentleman, who boasts that *Moliere* had not suffered in his Hands; but I think it is plain by this, that the *English* Poets do not know how to make Use of a Trifle; they heap Thoughts upon Thoughts, generally without Choice or Delicacy, overlooking for the most Part all Circumstances that are not within a narrow Compass, as well as a certain familiar Language which is in Nature, and which *Moliere* knew how to employ in the most agreeable Manner. The *English* pretend that they have what they call *Humour*, and that it is peculiar to them; but this *Humour*

is nothing more than jesting with the *French*, or a certain Fruitfulness of Imagination, which for the most Part tends to overthrow the Ideas of Things, turning Virtue into Ridicule, and making Vice agreeable; whereas the Property of a good Play is to correct, as well as to please. These ought to be the Drift of every Comedy, and if the People who frequent them, do not become more prudent, as well as more polite than their Neighbours, they do not answer to their Original Design.

You give us but bad Encouragement, said I laughing, to study the *English* Language for the Sake of their Theatrical Performances, but I hope their Tragedies make amends for the Defects of Comedy: As to Tragedy, replied the Count, if their Poets could be induced to study the Language of Nature more than they do, they would excel all *Europe*, for *England* is a Country that affords a large Scene of Passions and Catastrophes, and *Shakespear*, (one of the best Poets) has put a great Part of their History into his Tragedies; besides, the Genius of the Nation is inclined to Seriousness. The Language is bold and concise, and proper to express the Passions, and for this Reason their Tragedies excel in a great Number of fine Passages; they are not however without their Faults. The Plays as well as the Persons are a Mixture of the Comic and Serious. The most melancholy Events and the merriest Farce succeed each other alternately, which

which is not only ill contrived, but intirely inconsistent with the End of Tragedy. To this may be added that most of the Executions are done upon the Stage, which is sometimes covered with dead Bodies: *Œdipus* appears with his Eyes torn out, which is a most shocking Sight, and in my Opinion Poets of a great Genius may work up the Passions without such Scenes of Horror.

SOME of the Clergy in this Country have severely lashed Play-house Poets, especially those of modern Date, for their lewd Scenes, their Prophaneness and Blasphemy, and are provoked to the last Degree by their bringing *Christian* Priests upon the Stage, only to expose them; as *Parson Bull* in the *Relapse*; *Roger* in the *Scornful Lady*; *Say-Grace*, *Quiff-Cusheon*, the *Spanish Fryar*, &c. not does *Shakespear* himself escape them, whom they reprove for bringing *Sir Hugh Evans* upon the Stage, in the *merry Wives of Windsor*, and making him a silly chattering Priest. Of some other Plays they observe that the Ladies must have left their Wits and Modesty behind them, who could sit out the Obscene Discourses they were replenished with; however, the whole Clergy in this Country do not aim at abolishing all Theatrical Entertainments, but the Reforming them, as we may gather from these Lines made by a Clergyman.

*I like an Author that reforms the Age,
 And keeps the right decorum of the Stage,
 That always pleases by just Reasons, Rule :
 But for a tedious Droll, a quibbling Fool,
 Who with low nauseous Bawdry fills his Plays,
 Let him be gone, and on two Trussels raise
 Some Smithfield Stage, where he may act his
 Pranks,
 And make Jack-Puddings speak to Mount-
 banks.*

I am not at all inclined to chime in with some of your zealous hot-Headed Priests of any Religion, who represent a Play-house as a *Pagan-Temple*, where the Devil holds his filthy Courts, where those who frequent it worship this Infernal Fiend, and prostitute their Persons to impure Spirits, separating themselves from God, and plunging into all the Pollutions of Sin and Brutality. I find a heap of Authorities and Quotations indeed, produced by some modern Writers to prove the utter unlawfulness of all dramattick Performances ; but were they to consider a little the Authorities they cite, they would find them levelled, for the most Part, against the Plays and Shews of the *Heathens*, which no *Christian* would pretend to vindicate, or against the Abuse of Theatrical Entertainments of late Years ; for it is not easy to conceive that any tollerable Arguments can be brought against the Action and Representations of the Stage, which may not be

be brought against speaking and writing, by which we also convey and communicate our Thoughts and Ideas to others ; now if that can be done more effectually by Action joined with Speech, than by speaking or writing alone, why is Action condemned ? If I can set Virtue in a stronger Light, or expose Vice and Folly more effectually, by adding Action to my Words, than by speaking only ; surely Action is so far from being sinful, that it would rather be a Sin not to make use of it in the Cause of Virtue, as every Man is obliged to propagate Morality by such Means as are most likely to render his Endeavours successful.

If they had said no more than that Action may be abused, and often is to very ill Purposes, all the sensible Part of the World will agree with them, and the same may be said of speaking and writing out are therefore to be prohibited as absolutely sinful. The great Objection to Plays, is, that Vice is more effectually recommended, and makes deeper Impressions by the Action of the Stage, than it can do by speaking or writing alone, and true it is that the best Things may be abused to the worst Purposes. But this is rather an Argument for the *Regulation* of the Stage than for entirely *suppressing* these Entertainments.

THE intermixing Pleasure with Profit, has ever been held a happy Expedient for reclaiming

claiming loose People that will never attend any thing that has an Air of Seriousness ; how were Abundance of Gentlemen induced to read a great deal of good Morality in the *Tatlers* and *Spectators*, which appeared under the Form of News Papers, that would never have dipped into a Sermon, or indeed into any Author where they did not hope to be diverted as well as instructed.

THOUGH it must be owned that Theatrical Entertainments may accidentally occasion some to do amiss, yet on the other hand they certainly divert a great many People from more pernicious Amusements and Employments : Many that spend an Evening at a Play-house, would be either drinking or gaming, or intriguing elsewhere if no Plays were suffered ; or we might see them perhaps disturbing the Repose of their own Families, or their Neighbours, or plotting against the Government, and endeavouring to subvert the Constitution ; of which there happened in this Country towards the last-Century a flagrant Instance ; never were Plays, and all manner of Shews and Diversions cryed down, more than at the Beginning of the grand Revolution, by the precise Race of *Puritans* who might be said to destroy both their Religion and Government ; it was then indeed deemed a Sin to go to a Play or a Ball, to dance or even to dress decently ; but none at all to libel the Administration, to raise Forces against the King, or to spirit up the People to murder him. Treason and Rebellion were then

then publickly taught in Churches, and Preachers the principal Trumpeters of Sedition ; but notwithstanding the Church and Pulpit were thus abused, no body thought this a Reason at the Restauration for demolishing the Churches, or extirpating the Order of Priesthood ; all that was aimed at was to restore them to the Uses they were originally designed, namely, the Honour of God, and the propagating of Virtue and loyal Principles ; and the same will be thought to be practised in relation to the Stage. If the Theatre (which was originally designed to expose Vice and Folly, and to encourage great and generous Actions) is become the Nursery of Vice and Folly, as it is suggested, this is an Abuse that calls loudly for a Reformation, and as Players more than any other People, are here under the Controul of the Lord Chamberlain and the Administration, might very easily be effected.

THERE have been ambitious Princes and Ministers indeed, who have suffered, if not encouraged all manner of Vice, Extravagance and Debauchery, in order to corrupt and impoverish their Subjects, and render them ripe for Slavery and Dependance ; and scarce any People have lost their Liberties till they have been notoriously defective in point of Religion, Honour, and common Honesty. But I believe, Gentlemen, I have quite tired your Patience by my dwelling so long upon the Stage. So far from it, replied *Arabella*, that we are infinitely obliged to your curious
Re-

Remarks, which give us a Notion of the *English* Plays, of which our Ignorance of the Language would have otherwise deprived us ; but though I understand not a Word of *English*, I am resolved, added she, to go to the Play, if it were only to see the Ladies. The greatest Defect that I observe about them, answered the Count, is in their Teeth, of which a good Set does not fall to the Share of every Beauty, especially among those that live well. It is observed also, that the hale ruddy Complexion that is so frequent in the Country is seldom seen in Town, to which the Coal Smoak and the Want of Air and Exercise may in a great measure contribute. But though the *London* Ladies are ambitious to be fair, and may now and then voluntarily suffer some Inconveniencies from Physic to mend their Complexions in this Respect, yet they seem to despise that fresh Colour which the Men generally admire. They will do great Pennance also in a Pair of Stays, to reduce themselves to an unnatural Shape, though the Sex they most desire to recommend themselves to, certainly approve every thing that is easy and natural either in Shape or Complexion.

WE have here our black and our fair Beauties, the one have a great Advantage in their Hair, and the other in the Clearness of their Skins ; but where we see a Skin white as Ivory shaded with Hair black as Jet, such a Lady seldom fails to attract the Admiration of the Men, and the Envy of the Women ;
but,

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 311

but these, it must be acknowledged, are very rare. The Hair of Two Thirds of the Women are of a dark brown after they are come to Maturity, though in their Infancy it is usually a light Brown.

It is a vulgar Observation, how true I cannot say, that a Lady who is exquisitely fair is seldom unmercifully witty; and she that sings like a *Syren* has frequently something shocking in her Person. And happy for us it is so, for where a good Voice and Beauty centre in one Person, Man's boasted Reason is a poor Defence.

As to their Dress, I question whether it has not undergone more Revolutions within these last forty Years than their Principles. In the Reigns of King *Charles II.* and King *James II.* the Ladies dressed in their Hair, curled and adorned with Knots and Flowers. Whoever has seen an Assembly of *English* Ladies in this Dress, in the Bloom of Youth, sitting on Seats of a Semicircular Form, and rising gradually like an Amphitheatre, has had the most ravishing Prospect this Island ever afforded.

ABOUT the Time of the Abdication they began to cover their Heads with Commodore, and as fighting was in fashion, set them upright like Dragoons and Grenadiers Caps. which by degrees were advanced two Foot above their Hair. This occasioned a vast Expence of Muslin, Lace and Cambrick all
of

of foreign Growth and Manufacture, only to spoil a Mililon of good Faces, for it made the roundest, seem to be of the length of a Horses's. This Folly they owed to us like many others, in which *France* found its Account and *Britain* an unconcievable Loss.

WHEN this monstrous Fashion had reigned some Years, the Ladies Caps on a sudden dropped down close to their Heads, and instead of standing upright, were planted horizontally, and thus they continue to this Day, only sometimes contracted to a Snout and at others enlarged to a Hand's Breadth.

SOME Years after the Women's Coats began to advance to a vast Circumference ; first quilted-Coats upon quilted-Coats, and then Hoops in the form of a Bell of the largest Size, and their outward Coats proportionably large, insomuch that the Mercers found it necessary to increase their Stocks, and the People began to be apprehensive that their Houses, as well as Coaches, must be enlarged to admit a Lady of Fashion ; and a Seat in Church, which would hold a Dozen before, would scarce contain two well dresed Ladies, who were reduced to this Delemma, either to pull up their Coats in Church, or to forbear kneeling at their Devotions, so troublesome was the Whale-bone with which they were surrounded. The Ladies have the Advantage by means of these extravagant Hoops to shew their Legs and Linnen in the publick Streets, and to break the Mens Shins with these Coats of Armour as they pass. After all, I cannot say

Mademoiselle de Richelieu. 313

say but this Dress, which makes them resemble a Cone, or Sugar-loaf, is very becoming; A Lady seems only to want a large Stage to shew her self upon, or a whole Street to walk in clear of People. No doubt but those who reside in crowded Cities bless themselves that these Machines are reduced to a moderate Compass, that People may go about their Business with less Interruption than they did for some Years. I have a Book that fixes the Expence which an ordinary Gentlewoman in this Country must be at, in cloathing herself, which at a very moderate Estimate is as follows.

	<i>L</i>	<i>s</i>	<i>d</i>
1. Two Head-dresses, Ruffles and Hankerchiefs, with <i>Flanders</i> and <i>Mechlin</i> Lace.	70	00	00
2. Six others at three Guineas each.	18	18	00
3. Mobs and Night-cloaths Laced and plain.	05	00	00
4. Six Sets of dress'd Gowns and Petticoats.	70	00	00
5. Two pair of Stays, Jumps and Waistcoats.	05	00	00
6. Quilted Coats and other under Coats.	06	00	00
7. Three dozen of <i>Holland</i> Shifts at 1/5s each.	45	00	00
8. Silk worsted and thread Stockings with and without Silver and Gold Clocks.	03	00	00
9. Six pair of laced and other Shoes.	03	00	00
10. Two riding Habits, jockey Cap &c.	08	00	00
Vol. III	D d	11.	Hoods

314 *The TRAVELS of*

- | | |
|---|------------|
| 11. Hoods Gloves and Ribbons. | 03 00 00 |
| 12. Holland and cambrick Aprons, Handkerchiefs &c. | } 20 00 00 |
| 13. To these I may add a Gold Watch, Necklace, Rings, Pendants, and Buckles which no Gentlewoman dresses without. | } 100 00 0 |

356 18 00

THESE Things an ordinary Gentleman's or Merchant's Lady must and will have, and looks upon them as necessary to her well being, though her Husband, perhaps, is daily obliged to charge through a Regiment of Duns, People to whom he has pawned his Credit and Reputation to procure them; and there are Instances of Ladies that have thought these Articles more necessary than Bread, or Shoes and Stockings for their Children. But Gentlemen, why do you not stop my Volatility of Tongue. I never remember to have found myself so disposed to fatigue People with my Loquacity; and it is no small Happiness to you that the Hour of going to the Play approaches, and if the Countess, said he, looking at his Wife is in the Humour of passing an Hour or two there this Evening, we will go altogether, though I do not understand the Actors, said she, yet if you incline to go, I shall willingly go along with you, the rather because I shall have these Gentlemen to converse with, who know as little, it seems, of the Language as I do.

ABOUT

ABOUT an Hour after, we went to *Drury-Lane* Play House in the Count's Coach, and as it had been advertised in the publick Papers that a new Actor was to make his first Appearance, from whom a great deal was expected, the House happened to be very full, and we saw abundance of pretty Women. The Amphitheatre is mostly filled with Ladies, and as the Box we were in was not far from it, I could observe that their Eyes were mostly turned towards us. The Play, as the Count told us, was *Hamlet* Prince of *Denmark*, which drew Tears from many a fair Lady there. The Count who understood every Word the Actors said, told us so much of it, that we had more Pleasure in the Action, than if we had known nothing of the Plot or the different Characters. After the Play we returned to the Count's Lodgings, where we supped in Company with some *English* Gentlemen that he had invited, who being Men of good Sense, and speaking the *French* tollerably well, we passed the Evening in very agreeable Conversation, and retired to our Lodgings about one o' Clock.

NEXT Morning we went to wait upon the *French Ambassador*, whom we had not seen as yet, he received us very politely, and invited us to Dinner; where there was a Mixture of *French* and *English*. Among the rest, a Niece of the Ambassador's, who had come over with his Lady, and a Girl, tho' not strictly speaking beautiful, yet agreeable,

sprightly and full of Wit, as *Arabella* told me, who happened, being next her, to have a pretty long Conversation with her, and I verily believe, she found the *Chevalier de Montferan* very much to her Taste, if a Judgment can be made from her Behaviour, and their Conversation, which my Friend recounted when we were by ourselves. The Embassador asked us if we had been at Court. We told him that we were but just arrived, and had seen nobody but the Count *de Cani* and his Lady, who happened to lodge next Door to us. You can have no better Introducator at Court than that Gentleman, said he, who is very well known both to the King and the whole Courtiers; but if you chuse rather to be introduced by me, I will willingly do it the first Time I go to Court. We thanked his Excellence, and told him that we would rather chuse to owe that Obligation to him than any other Body. Very well, said he, I design to set out for *Kensington* To-morrow at Eleven, and if you will come here you shall go along with me in my Coach, which we did, and had the Honour of saluting the *British* Monarch, who received us very graciously and talked to us some Minutes about our Travels.

As we were returning to Town the Embassador asked if we designed to pass the Winter at *London*. This is the very worst Season, said he, to come to this Place, for the Quality are all in the Country, and the Diversions do not begin till the Meeting of the Parliament,

ment, and then the Town large as it is, I mean the Court End of it is very much crowded. *Arabella* answered that we had intended to pass the Winter in *London*, and to make the Tour of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland* the next Summer, but that unexpected Affairs called us sooner to *France* than we expected, and as we designed to take a transient View of *Holland* and *Flanders* in our Way home, we intended to leave *England* in a very few Days. From this, Gentlemen, said he, I conclude that either you have not seen our Beauties in this Town, or that your Hearts must be prepossessed. We have seen so many fine Women, said I, in the Course of our Travels, that Beauty is become so familiar to us we can look upon a handsome Woman without losing our Hearts, otherwise we would not have brought them with us to *England*. You do not, it is true, said he, run so great a Risk now as you might two Months hence, when the Town will be full of *Belles*, such as I believe you have not yet seen; and had you visited *Scotland* and *Ireland*, where I am told the Ladies far exceed the *English*, your Danger would have been still greater; so that all Things considered you do very wisely in retiring from these dangerous Countries. We thanked his Excellency for the Interest he took in our Preservation, and asked his Commands for *Holland* and *France*. In the former I suppose, said he, you will see *Monsieur de Fenelon*, to whom I beg you'll make my Compliments, after which we retired to our Lodgings, where *Arabella* found

318 *The TRAVELS of*

a Billet-doux, written in a Sort of *French*, which for its Singularity deserves a Place here.



To Master Marquis Montfirian, at his Lodgings in Suffolk-Street.

Moy trouve vous joli Monfi, moy aime vous, moy Jeune et Folie par ma foy, si vous voy moy, vous aime moy. Ma mere aime moy, moy a deux mille bonnes Guineas fortune, et moy le vous donne si vous moy mari. Moy aller a Paris avec moy mari, moy donne vous mon coeur a la Play, moy le vous jure que moy aime vous-plus que ma mere, venes voir moy et moy vous dire plus de Bouche je suis

Votre tresumble Serviteur,

MARY HASTINGS.

Quan vous venes moy voir demande pour Widow Hastings, at her House in Charles-Street, York-Buildings, tout le monde connoit elle.

As some who, perhaps, understand good *French* may be at a Loss to know the Meaning of this Love-Letter, the Translator has thought proper to render it literally that it may lose none of its Beauties.

To



To Master Marquis Montferian.

ME find you a pretty Monsieur, me love you, me young and handsome upon my Faith, if you see me, you love me. My Mother love me, me have Two thousand good Guineas Fortune, and me give you them, if you my Husband. Me go to *Paris* with my Husband, me give you my Heart at the Play-house, me swear it that me love you more than my Mother. Come see me, and me tell you more by Word of Mouth.

I am, &c.

HERE is a tip-top Love Letter, cried I, and this Lady's Stile pleases me better than all the delicate Expressions of your *Italian* and *Spanish* Mistresses, pure Nature this and Sincerity painted in every Word of the lovely Jargon. will you not go and see her? Ay, ay, to be sure I must go, and tell her that methink *Miss Hastings* very pretty, but that me cannot marry an English Woman with Two thousand good Guineas. But my dear *Alithea*, said she putting on a serious Air, we have now satisfied our Curiosity so far as our Time will allow, and I could wish you would think of leaving this Country, for my poor Curate will

will be longing for my Arrival, and I believe my Affairs will be a terrible Load upon him. I will set out with you this very Moment if you please, said I, for I begin to long to be in *France* as well as you: Well, let us in God's Name, replied she, set out To-morrow Morning for *Harwich*, where we will take the Opportunity of the Packet-boat for *Holland*, of which I think we must take a transient View before we return to *France*. Agreed, said I, so we gave Orders to have every thing ready by Six o' Clock next Morning, and then went to take Leave of the Count and his Lady, who told us that if we happened to come thorow *Brittany*, they hoped to have the Pleasure of seeing us.

WE set out as we had determined in a flying Coach, with our two Maids in it with us, and our Footmen on Horseback, and arrived at *Harwich* in the Evening, and about Twelve that very Night the Packet-boat set Sail, and landed us safe at *Helvoetsluice* about Twelve o'Clock next Day, from whence we went by Water to the *Briel* a fortified Town, and the Walls planted with Trees; and from this continued going by Water to *Rotterdam* where we lay, and employed the Half of the next Day to view the Town, which is said to be next to *Amsterdam* of any Town in *Holland*. It lies on the North-side of the *Maes*, about 30 Miles to the Southward of *Amsterdam*, and is a large City of a triangular Form, and very populous, the
Canals

Canals which run through the Town bring up the Ships to their Doors.

AFTER Dinner we set out by Water (which is the most convenient Way of Travelling in this Country and cheapest) for the *Hague*, passing through *Delft* which is pleasantly situated among the Meadows, the Streets spacious with Canals running through them planted with Trees. We walked on Foot from the *Rotterdam* to the *Hague*-gate the whole length of the Town, and took Boat again for the *Hague* where we arrived in little more than an Hour; and took Lodgings at the Sign of the *Marechal de Turenne's a French Inn*.

THE *Hague* esteemed a Village because it has no Walls, is however a very large and handsome Place, encompassed with fine Meadows and pleasant Groves, in the midst of which is a Pleasure House belonging to the Princess of *Orange*. Here the States of *Holland* assemble, as also the supreme Courts of Judicature are held in it. Foreign Ministers are admitted to their Audience and reside here, and all publick Affairs are transacted, which draws a Multitude of People hither, and occasions its being a very flourishing Town.

WE remained a Week at the *Hague*, during which we went to all the Assemblies which were intirely in the *French Taste*, and a very pretty Lady did me the Honour to own that I was not disagreeable to her, *Arabella*
made

made more than one Conquest, and more than one Husband uneasy, and had we made any considerable Stay, I believe we should have had Intrigues enough upon our Hands, but we were both too anxious to see our dear native Country, to think of amusing ourselves here as we had done in some other Places; besides, the Weather was turning very sharp, and we wanted to get in a warmer Climate before the Cold grew excessive. All these Reasons joined together made us abandon all our Amours on the twenty sixth of *October*, on which Day we set out for *Utrecht*, taking *Leyden* and *Harlem* in our Way, at each of which Places we remained a Day to view them, the former is famous for *Linnen*; they have also a considerable Trade in Thread and Tapes. Here the famous *Laurence Castor* dwelt, to whom the *Dutch* ascribe the Invention of Printing in the Year 1440 which is disputed with them by the Inhabitants of *Mentz* in *Germany*. This Town is famous also for the brave Defence it made against the *Spaniards* in the Year 1573, when the Women formed themselves into Regiments and Companies to assist the *Burghers*, but being obliged to surrender after ten Months gallant Defence, the *Spaniards* exercised great Cruelties on the Inhabitants, destroying many of them in cold Blood.

Leyden stands on the old Channel of the *Rhine*, the Mouth whereof being now choaked up, occasions the Waters to stagnate, which renders the Air unhealthful. It is however

ever esteemed one of the neatest and pleasantest Towns in the *Low-countries*. The Buildings beautiful and magnificent, the Streets broad and exceeding clean, with Canals in the Middle of them, planted with Rows of Trees. This Place is famous for its University, their Library is in great Esteem for its Manuscripts, and the Anatomy Theatre exceeds that of *Padua*, or the Surgeons Hall in *London*, having a vast Number of Skeletons of all Kinds and Sizes, several Mummies, and particularly one of an *Egyptian* Prince eighteen hundred Years old, with *Pagan* Idols and Relicts, and Habits of People of the most distant Countries.

WE arrived at *Utrecht* on the twenty eighth in the Evening, the City is well built and populous, pleasantly situated on the Channel of the old *Rhine*, and as it stands in an healthful Air, is much resorted to by Persons of Distinction who have fine Houses in the Place. From the Tower of *St Martin's* Church of four hundred and sixty Steps, there is a noble Prospect of the adjacent Country, no less than fifty walled Towns appearing at once in View.

THE Province of *Utrecht* is one of the most pleasant and healthful of the *United Netherlands*, for here they may be said to tread upon firm Ground, whereas the maritime Provinces are almost all Quagmire and Bog, made habitable by incredible Labour and Expence.

AFTER

AFTER remaining three Days at *Utrecht* we set out for *Amsterdam* where we arrived on the first of *November*. This large City is the Capital of *Holland* and of the seven Provinces and is almost in the form of a Crescent, the Foundations laid upon vast Piles of Timber drove into the Earth at a prodigious Expence, the Place where it stands being a perfect Morass or Bog. The Trade of this Place is surprizingly great, and the Ships of all Sizes in the Harbour are not to be numbered. There is a perpetual Hurry of Business, and betwixt twelve and one at the Exchange, where the Merchants assemble and transact for several Millions in a Day, for ought I know you may see ten thousand People assembled.

WE were in no Dread of *Billet-doux* in this Country, where all Appetites and Passions run lower and cooler than in any other Place of the World, Avarice excepted. Quarrels are vary rare, Revenge seldom heard of, and Jealousy scarce ever known. Their Tempers are not airy enough for Joy, nor any unusual Strains of pleasant Humour, nor warm enough for Love. This is indeed sometimes talked of among young Fellows as a thing they have heard of, but never felt, and as a Discourse that becomes them rather than affects them. It is very rare for any of them to be really in Love, nor do the Women seem to care whether they are or no, which may be thus accounted for ; either the Men are
such

such Lovers of Liberty, as not to bear the Servitude of a Mistress, or the Dullness of the Air renders them less susceptible of more refined Passions, or they are diverted from it by the Intention every Man has to his proper Business, and the same Causes may have had the same Effects among their married Women, who have the whole Care and Management of their Domestic Affairs, and live generally in good Fame; a certain Sort of Chastity being hereditary and habitual to them. The same Dullness of Air may dispose them to that uncommon Assiduity, and constant Application of their Minds, with that perpetual Study and Labour upon every thing they undertake, never leaving one Scent to follow another they meet with, the Fault of Lighter and more ingenious People. The same Quality of the Air may incline them to the Custom of drinking, so much laid to their Charge, which probably may not only be necessary to their Health, as they generally believe it, but to the Vigour and Improvement of their Understandings in a thick foggy Air, and such a Coldness of Temper and Complexion; for though the Use or Excess of Drinking may destroy Men's Abilities who live in better Climates, and are of warmer Constitutions, it may improve their Parts who are of cold Complexions, and live in a dull Air, and perhaps be necessary to thaw and move the frozen or unactive Spirits of the Brain.

As to the Government of their Passions, especially that of Love, in which they are represented as perfect Stoicks; but perhaps were the same Liberties allowed by publick Authority, to the Youth of any other Nation as are to those of *Holland*, they might be guilty of as few Extravagancies in Love and Gallantry as the *Dutch*. For here are *Musick-Houses* which pay a Tax to the States for a Licence to entertain as many Wenches as they please, and the Girls pay each of them another Tax, every Time they are admitted into these venerable Schools, and the Scandal is as little in being found at one of these Houses, as at a Play-house with us. When a sufficient Company is met, an Entertainment consisting of several nice Dishes, and the best of Wines are set before them, where after they have eat and drank plentifully in a publick Room, the Dishes are removed, and a Ball or Entertainment of Musick and Dancing succeeds. There are a great many Closets, where any Gentleman that pleases may retire with his Nymph, and no more Notice is taken of it when he returns than if he had gone out to speak with a Friend, and the Entertainment concludes with Dancing or Drinking, as the Company are disposed.

THE Reason given for encouraging these Houses, is, that considering the Numbers of Sailors that resort to their principal Cities, who have been long kept on board their Ships without Women, and fed with Salt Meats,
if

if they should not indulge them in this Particular, they could never keep their Wives or Daughters to themselves, and of two Evils, therefore, they chuse the least.

I do not indeed think that the *Dutch* are a People who deal much in speculative Love, or dwell much upon the Virtues or Accomplishments of their Mistresses; any Girl the Man thinks qualified to gratify his Brutal Passion, and to make a good Drudge in his Family, is a Wife fit for him, he is not very nice in other Respects; and if his Mistress should prove unkind, he would go to the *Musick Houses*, and think no more of her. On the other hand, the Women whom some cry up so much for their hereditary Chastity, if a Gallant attacks them that they like, and they intend him for their Husband, they make no manner of Scruple of granting the last Favours before Marriage. It is the commonest thing in the World for a Woman of any Quality to be married in *Holland* with a big Belly; so that if a Gentleman does succeed in his Addresses, there is no Manner of Reason to run mad for Love, and if he does not, a *Musick House* is his Remedy; and the indulging young Fellows in these Entertainments is thought to be one of the most effectual Remedies to prevent their Sons making disadvantageous Matches. As for the Religion of the Matter, in tolerating or establishing Whoredom by a Law, this Objection has been long laugh'd out of the *Low-countries* where they have no other Religion but what is political.

AFTER remaining a Week at *Amsterdam*, during which we viewed all the publick Buildings, some curious Cabinets and Gardens in which some of the *Dutch* are profuse, we took the Way to *Dort*, where we designed to embark for *Brabant*. It took us two Days to reach the former, where we hired a Yacht, and in two Hours after our Arrival set Sail, and landed at a little Village in *Brabant*, about eight or ten Miles from *Breda*, situated in a flat Country on the Banks of the River *Marck*, thirty Miles North-east of *Antwerp*, a large populous well built City regularly fortified after the modern Way, and one of the strongest Fortresses on the *Dutch* Frontiers, and hath usually a numerous Garison of the States Troops. We remained a Night here and set out next Morning early in a Stage for *Antwerp*, which is a large City about seven Miles, we were told, in Circumference, and surrounded with a beautiful Wall and Bastions faced with Stone; the Top of the Wall is not less than an Hundred Foot broad, and well planted with Trees.

THE Citadel is a Pentagon of five royal Bastions, and stands on the South-side of the City on the Banks of the *Scheld*, commanding the City, the River, and the neighbouring Country. We stayed two Days here to visit the Churches which are magnificent, particularly the *Jesuits* Church is admired for its Dimensions, curious Workmanship, and Variety of Paintings drawn by *Rubens* and other famous Hands. The Inside of the Church is lined with the finest Marble, and supported by Marble Pillars. W

WE happened to have a very strange Sort of a travelling Physician with us in the Coach, from *Breda*, who had travelled all over *Asia* and *America*, and spoke a great many different Languages. He told us his native Country was *France*, and that he had been carried to the *Levant* by his Parents when very young. He pretended to have discovered a great many rare Secrets in the Eastern Parts of the World in the Medicinal Way, and he gave us an Instance of his Skill at least in what may be called a *Deceptio Visus*, or deceiving the Sight. We were curious to hear him talk upon Travels, and invited him to sup with us the first Night of our Arrival at *Antwerp*; and what we saw him do may be said to be something surprizing, though, perhaps, to be accounted for by Men well skilled in Physicks and natural Philosophy.

THE first Thing he did after Supper was to take out a small Vial of about Half a Foot Length, of which he had no sooner taken out the Cork, than a Pillar of a clear Sort of Smoak ascended from the Mouth of his Vial to the Cieling of the Room, where meeting with Resistance it gathered into a Sort of Cloud, and the Pillar of Smoke still continuing to ascend, the Cloud by Degrees came nearer and nearer to our Heads, and at last we were quite in it, and would have sworn that instead of being in a Room sitting at a Table with Fruit, Bottles, and Glasses on it,

we were in the Middle of a Vineyard, and that the Clusters of Grapes were hanging about us on all Sides: This *Deceptio Visus* continued till the Smoke was by Degrees dissipated, then every thing resumed its former Shape.

THE next Curiosity which he shewed made us laugh very heartily, though the Fellow on whom he tried the Experiment, as well as the Inn-keeper, thought we were Devils in Men's Cloaths. He made the Drawer that attended wash a Glass for him, and when he came to give it him, he had some Sort of Powder betwixt his Fore-finger and Thumb, which he clapt to the Fellow's Nose, who believing it was Snuff, which he happened to like, made no Difficulty of taking it into his Nose, and in a Moment fell a dancing about the Room as if he had been mad, pulling off his Coat, Vest and Shirt. The Landlord, who was in the Kitchen below, hearing such a Noise above his Head came up to see what was the Matter, and had no sooner set his Nose within the Room than his Drawer capering up to him, made him dance round the Room with him. The Master believing the Fellow was possessed, got at last out of his Hands, and took to his Heels, crying as he ran down Stairs, *the Devil, the Devil!* He was not long gone before his dancing Drawer stopped from capering, and seemed for some time as if he had been quite stupid. At last he came to himself, and taking up his Shirt, which he had thrown

thrown one Way and his Cloaths another, ran out of the Room so terrified, that he would not come near any of us while we staid in the House, and the Landlord was little better; for he certainly thought he had got some of the Infernal Inhabitants for Guests, and all that we could say or do could not make him easy.

WE easily conceived that this Powder, by snuffing it up the Nose, made the Man delirious, and this dancing Madness continued till the Vapour was dissipated; our Doctor told us that these were only Trifles to what he could shew us were we in a proper Place; but here, said he, and all over *Flanders*, there are still Remains of the *Spanish* Bigottry, and though there is no regular Inquisition, when a Man does any thing that their shallow Comprehensions cannot reach, they immediately conclude that there is Devilry in it, and will shun such a Person as they would *Old Nick* himself.

WE dined at *Mechlin* (or *Malines*) next Day, half way to *Brussels*, situated on the River *Dyle*, famous for the fine Laces that are wrought in it, and in the Evening arrived at *Brussels* the Capital of *Brabant*, and of the *Austrian Netherlands*, which stands on the Declivity of a Hill on the little River *Sinn*, or *Saine*. This City, very large and populous, is the usual Residence of the Regent of the *Austrian Netherlands*, and of the Nobility and People of Distinction. We
thought

thought ourselves in *France* here, for the Language spoke at Court and by the better Sort, is *French*, and it is commonly called little *Paris*. The People are gay, dressy, and affect *French* Politeness, the Women dress well, and love Pleasures and gallantry. We passed eight Days very agreeably at *Brussels*, going alternately to Court, to the Prince *de lo Tour Taxis*, to the Prince *de Horn's*, and other Noblemen's Houses, where we were extremely well received and diverted, and would have made a longer Stay in this agreeable Place, had not *Arabella* been uneasy 'till she got to her Native Country. However during the short Time we remained, we made, (for I had here my Share) Conquests from the Princess to the Chamber Maid, and not only *Christian* but *Jewish* Hearts, felt the Effects of the *Chevalier de Montferan's* Charms: The Daughter of a very rich *Jew*, who made a very good Figure in *Brussels*, fell so desperately in Love with my Friend, that when we left *Brussels*, she followed us Step by Step to *Paris*, and was terribly bit when she came there, but I shall defer her Story 'till we arrive there ourselves.

FROM *Brussels*, we went streight to *Tourney*, situated on the River *Scheld* which runs thro' it, and surrounded by pleasant fruitful Meadows. It is a large populous well built City, and a Place of good Trade, and having been for a considerable Time in the Hands of the *French* before the last War, it's Fortifications were brought to as great Perfection

Perfection as any in the *Low Countries*: But what added most to the Strength of the Place, as the Allies found by dear bought Experience when they besieged it in the Year 1729, was the Mines which blew up hundreds, if not thousands of the Besiegers at a Blast. When they had made themselves Masters of the strongest Works that ever were contrived, and the *French* could maintain them no longer, then did they set Fire to the Mines, and blow up whole Regiments at a Time, who fell in a Shower of shattered Limbs and mangled Carcases. These Mines consist of vast subterraneous Vaults so well contrived, that they may rather Pass for Terrass-walks than Mines. In the Center of the Citadel there is a Well, the Surface of whose Waters is fifty Foot from the Mouth, just above which Water are Balconies that lead to those beautiful destructive Caverns. In the Church of the *Croisiers*, whose Marble Pillars and Altar Piece are much admired, we see the Crowning of our Saviour done by the celebrated *Rubens*, a Piece of inestimable Value, with another Picture of the Nativity done by the same Hand. There is in the Market-place an old Building said to be of *Roman* Architecture, and frequently called *Julius Cæsar's* Palace: Let this be as it will, the Town is certainly very antient. King *Henry* the VIII of *England* besieged and took it, and built the old Citadel, but it was delivered up to the *French* again, upon a Treaty of Marriage between the eldest Son of *France* and the Princess *Mary*.

It

It changed Masters very often, and is now one of the *Dutch* Barrier Towns, under the Dominion of the *Imperialists*.

From *Tournay* we took the Road to *Lisle*, which is a large and pretty Town standing on the River *Deule* and so well fortified, that it cost the *Allies* more Men to take it in the late War, than any Town in *Flanders*, and was very near baffling their united Forces. We went next morning after our Arrival to the *Intendant's*, and were invited to dine with him, where we staid playing Cards till the Hour of the Play, to which all the Company went, and returned with several more to Supper where we had dined. I happened to sit next to the Count *de Rouffol*, with whom I had a long Conversation upon my Travels; he was a Gentleman of admirable good Sense, to which he joined a Form that few Women could look upon with Indifference, and to be sure no Man in *France* had dealt more in Gallantry than the Count. He seemed to be pleased with my Character of the different Countries that I had visited, and told me that he was glad to find so much prudence in one of my Youth, adding, that if I would do him the Favour to drink Chocolate with him about ten o'Clock next Day, we would talk more at Liberty upon foreign Countries, and that he would inform me of a pretty odd Adventure that had happened to him at *London*. I told him that I would wait upon him if I knew where, upon which he gave me his Direction.

WE

WE passed the Evening at the *Intendant's*, with all the Gaiety imaginable, and while I was talking with my Count, *Arabella* was in close Conversation with a pretty Lady who did not think her Time ill spent. When we retired to our Inn, I told my Friend of my Engagement with the Count *de Roussol*; by all means go, said she, and while you are with your Count, I shall be with a Countess who has invited me to break fast with her, and where I expect to hear of Adventures perhaps as Curious, and I dare say more modest, at least, than your Count's, for I have heard a little of his Character. Well, well, said I, he has been a Rake and all that, but I fancy he is Tamer now, and I am resolved to stand the Brunt, and I do not know but, nay I am very sure, I shall come better off than your Ladyship, for I do verily suppose that your Countess has a Plot upon your Person: But it is late my dear, added I, so let us go to Bed and take some Rest, before the grand Work of To-morrow.

NEXT Morning, I got myself dressed by nine o' Clock, and went to the Count's House, whom I found with a *Theophrastus* in his Hand. After the first Compliments, he told me that he remembered his Promise, which he would perform so soon as we had drank a Dish or two of Chocolate, which was directly served, and when the Things and Servant were retired: As I am speaking, said he, to a Gentleman who has been in
London,

336 *The TRAVELS of*

London, and, no Doubt, knows the Character of the *English*, I shall have no Occasion to enlarge upon that: The Reason, continued he, of my going to that Country, was a Quarrel with the Count *de Longchamp* about a certain Lady in *Paris* to whom he made his Court, and twenty others as well as he and I, to no Purpose, for she was what we may call the complete Jilt, who had the Art of keeping a Crowd of Lovers still in her Service, and serving them all with the same Sauce. She gave me one Day as the Author of a Satyrical Raillery which she had herself said of the Count *de Longchamp* whom she hated. This Story came to his Ears, and the first Time I saw him he spoke of it in a Manner that Piqued me, and we appointed to meet that very Evening in the *Place des Victories*, where we fought with Moon Light, and the poor *Longchamp* fell after being twice run thorow the Body. As he had pronounced my Name pretty loudly in the Heat of the Combate, and his Death happening next Day, I was obliged to get out of *Paris* and to leave the Care of my Pardon to my Friends; to be brought into so terrible a Scrape for a Woman from whom I had obtained nothing, was, you may believe, very afflicting, and I then found, by fatal Experience, that the most modest Coquette is more dangerous in Society than the most dissolute Woman. I went freight to *Calais* where my Regiment lay; and after settling some Affairs passed over to *England*.

THE Duke of *Sommerfet*, whom I had known at *Paris*, presented me to the King. This Prince received me with his usual Goodness, and I even had the Honour to sup with him at the Dutchess of *Kendal's* his Mistress. I went sometimes to the languid Circle of the Court. I was invited to dine, by Turns, at the most of the Persons of Distinction's Houses, and was very much surprized to see the Ladies retire when the Desert came upon the Table. I remained toasting Healths with the Men, and to hear them talking Politicks. I sipp'd Tea with the Ladies, and got often drunk with the Men at Taverns. I directly fell in with the *English* Manners, learned the Language, agreed to the Character of vain Triflers given to the *French*, and passed for one of the best Sort of *Frenchmen* that they had seen.

THE Pleasures of the *English* in general are turned towards a Debauchery that has nothing alluring in it, and their Jokes would not appear delicate among us. The Women are not, as in *France*, the principal Object of the Men's Attention, and the Soul of Society.

I happened to fall acquainted with my Lady *B----*, who was a very pretty genteel Woman, and her Pride joined to an Air of Contempt and Scorn, after inspiring me with a Sort of Disgust, made me resolve on Revenge, a very odd Motive of Love. I was

sensible that a good deal of Art was necessary in my Conduct, and in concealing my Sentiments from a Woman of such a Character. I began to make my Conversation agreeable to her, by retrenching the Trifles necessary with our *Frenchwomen*. I expressed my Sentiments in a plain simple Manner, though with an Air that had not a little of the dogmatical in it, and I soon found that I had touched the right String; for my Lady took Pleasure to converse with me. The first Favour she granted me was to speak *French*, which she declined doing before, but she did not deviate in the least from her stiff, cold, and imposing Air. I studied to mimic her Behaviour, by shewing no Sort of Forwardness, being sensible that it would not be agreeable, particularly as I had no Opportunity of being with her in private. I passed more than three Months without making any farther Progress, and durst not so much as complain. In short, I was upon the Point of abandoning my Enterprize, and her Ladyship, when one Morning my Servant came and told me that a Hackney Coachman wanted to speak with me. I ordered him to be admitted, and he told me that a Lady waited for me in his Coach at *St. James's Gate*. I obeyed the Summons, though I could not imagine what gave Occasion to such a Rendezvous; and you may judge how great was my Surprise, when I found it was my Lady muffled up in her Hood, who desired me to come into the Coach, to which you may believe I readily obeyed. She or-

dered the Coachman to drive to the Place where she had told him. I attempted to speak, but she put her Hand upon my Mouth, so that we sat and looked at one another till we reached the City, where we went into a House of no great Appearance, and passed into a magnificent Apartment of which she had the Key. I broke forth into rapturous Acknowledgments, and I perceived that she received them with Marks that convinced me they pleased her. You ought, no doubt, to be astonished, said she, at the Step I have now taken ! I could wish, answered I, that it were owing to Love. Be content, said she, I have loved you for a considerable time ; you loved me, replied I, with Vivacity, why did you keep me in the dark, and make me suffer so cruelly ? Do not let us think of what is past, said she, I have examined your Conduct, and I have said more to myself than you durst have done, and you ought to be convinced of it by this Day's Adventure. My Fortune and my Life are in your Hands. I made the proper Use of this favourable Declaration, and found this fair Lady, who appeared so cold and proud in publick, so kind and tender in private, that I could scarce believe my own Happiness. We parted after all the Protestations of Fidelity that sincere Friends can make, that is, disengaged from all the silly childish Language of Gallantry. Do not expect, said she, in publick the least Testimony of the Sentiments with which you have inspired me. If you would continue to please me, be as reserved in Company with me as if nothing had passed

between us. I shall make a Judgment this Evening at the drawing Room, where I expect to have the Pleasure of seeing you, and where I shall scarce give you a Look. Allow me to take my own Way, and depend on my Constancy. It shall be my Business to inform you of the Days in which I can see you, either here, or else where. You shall have no Trouble but to answer the Letters I send you.

WE lived some Time without the least Change in our Commerce, but Jealousy came to disturb it. A *French* Woman, who was my Relation, came to *London* upon some Business, and made my Lady jealous: She made me no Reproaches, I only observed that she became Melancholy and reserved, and far from seeking to let me know the Subject of her Discontent, she kept a profound Silence, and never once named the Person who displeased her. As for me who was very Innocent, and knew nothing of my Lady's Suspicions, I was quite easy and calm, when I received a Billet from her, of which the Contents were: That mad with Spite and Fury at my Treachery, she desired no more but to take away her own Life, after having sacrificed me to her just Revenge. This Billet made me tremble for her, knowing how little the *English* value Life, by the frequent Murders that they commit upon themselves. I wrote immediately desiring a Meeting: My Letter had an Air of Candour, Simplicity and Innocence. I loved her and was incapable of the Crime which she

laid

laid to my Charge. My Request was granted, and I undeceived her; but her Mind had been under cruel Agitations, of which she still felt the Impression, her Love and Pride had been too much struck with the bare Alarms to which they had been exposed. She was none of those Women who can say Things that they never resolved to do; I foresaw a Storm but I had no Notion of its breaking out in the Manner it did.

SHE gave me a Rendezvous in her City House where we met, and after giving me Marks of a more violent Passion than she had hitherto done. Do you truly love me, said she, I will not be flattered, Speak sincerely. Can you doubt of it, said I, my Love constitutes my whole Happiness, but my Heart is not satisfied. I observe that you have Something upon your Spirits that you conceal from me, do you imagine that my Delicacy can overlook it? Lay your Heart open to me. It is, replied she, for that Purpose that I came here to Day. I am jealous, which is saying enough to let you know what I have suffered, and since even this has not been able to make me break off all Correspondence with you, I plainly perceive that I must love you while I live. I am to blame in this Occasion, and I will not expose myself to the like again. You are given to Gallantry, you will be loved, and soon become unfaithful to me. I will have you all to myself without the Fears of losing you. London is become odious to me, I cannot be easy in it: See if you will follow me

to the End of the World, I am resolv'd upon it; if you refuse me, your Love is weak, and your Heart is not worthy of me.

THIS Project astonish'd me, but being unwilling to reject her Proposal directly, I represented her Engagements with a Husband, and the Noise which her Elopement and mine would Occasion, and added, that my Fortune did not permit me to expose her in a Country where I had no Resource. She listened without interrupting me, and when I left of speaking. I have thought of every Thing, replied she, the Engagements with my Husband amount to no more than a civil Convention. I have no Children; I have made his Fortune by the Estate which I have brought him, and which I leave to him; but I am still Mistress of Considerable Plantations in *Jamaica*, we will in the first Place go there, and retire with our Effects to any Corner of the World you like best; Kingdoms are equal to me, and where you chuse to reside shall be my native Country. I only live for you, the Noise of my Flight concerns me but little; but speak your Thoughts with Sincerity, will you be sorry to part with your own Country; such an Attachment would be inconsistent with Love, and even with Reason. Do you consider that the same Country has outlaw'd you for Sentiments whereof the want would have dishonour'd you? Is it possible to regret Men whose Ideas are so false and despicable. If you love me I am every Thing to you. Love ought to destroy all

Pre-

Prejudices. My Project which is above the Character of your *Frenchwomen* may astonish you, and therefore I do not this Moment require your Answer, I give you eight Days, during which I shall see you without opening my Mouth about what I now propose. In pronouncing these Words, she went away and left me strangely perplexed. Honour and Probity were against my Lady's Project, but the Excess of her Love melted me, and redoubled my Attachment to her. I foresaw with Grief, that my Refusal would perhaps be attended with fatal Consequences, both for her and for myself. In this Situation I went to see the *Abbé du Bois*, since Cardinal, and who was at that Time in *London* as a Minister from *France*. He perceived my Trouble and pressed me to tell him the Subject.

His Character more adapted to the Business of Intriguing than Negotiation, had made him discover my Adventure, he had often mentioned it, and I had only told him what a Man of Honour might say. The *Abbé*, who of all Men had the worst Opinion of Women, from the Characters of those with whom he had always lived, would have had no great Regard for my Lady her self, but he had for me, and therefore I opened my Mind to him. The Affair appeared to him to be of Importance. Every Thing is Party in *England*, and the Women are as much attached as the Men to the Side that they espouse. My Lady was a Tory, and the *Regent* thought it necessary.

cessary at that Time to keep well with them. The *Abbé* sensible of the Consequence of a terrible Clamour such as this (occasioned by a *Frenchman*) in the present Circumstances of his Negotiation, neglected nothing to engage me to go directly to *France*. I represented the Danger of my returning before my Affair was made up. He offered me a Letter to the Duke of *Orleans*, and assured me that the Prince would get my Affair terminated to my Satisfaction. He even added Threats, and your political Threats are commonly serious. In one Word, the *Abbé* forced me to be gone without seeing my Lady, and permitted me only to write to her, which you may imagine I did in the most passionate Terms, expressing the Grief I had to leave her, and withal represented, that her last Proposal directly clashing with the Sentiments of a Man of Honour, obliged me to be gone, though I was too sensible of the Value of my Loss ever to forget it. My return was happy; the Regent was moved with my Situation, as the *Abbé* had assured me, and my Affair was speedily and happily terminated. A few Days after my Arrival at *Paris*, I received a Letter from my Lady in which all that injured Love could inspire was expressed, and in a very little Time after I learned that she had shortened her Days. This News plunged me into the deepest Grief, and I was no more sensible of the Pleasure of finding myself in my native Country. I accused myself a thousand Times of Barbarity. The Image of this unfortunate Lady was still before my Eyes,

Eyes, and even now I cannot call her to Mind without Emotion.

NEVERTHELESS, my Friends left no Stone unturned to drag me from the Retirement to which I was obstinately attached, and to dissipate the gloomy Impressions of a Melancholy, of which they dreaded the Consequences. I yielded at first, out of Complaisance, to their Advices, and in a little Time Reason seconded their Efforts. Besides the particular Reasons that I had of being melancholy, People contract a serious Air in *London*, which does not leave them even in the Midst of Pleasures; I was a little smitten with the Distemper; the Air and Conversation in *France* are the best Remedies against it.

THE Moment I was prevailed upon to frequent Company, my Taste for Women revived; but I was at a Loss at first how to dispose of my Person. I luckily found out some of my ancient Mistresses who were complaisant enough, and I was thereby convinced that we may depend upon the Constancy of Women, when we do not require even the Appearance of Fidelity from them. In short I fell to my old Trade of Gallantry again, and made several Conquests which are not fit to be repeated, because some of the Women are still alive, and have preserved a pretty good Character in the World.

I took Leave of this old Letcher who was persuaded that I had been highly diverted with his Adventure, which, if true, shewed how little Women ought to depend upon the Discretion of Men, and if a Romance, he was still more guilty. I returned to our Inn and found *Arabella* waiting for me. Well, my dear, said I, let us compare Notes, and see which of us has been best diverted this Morning. If your Entertainment was no better than mine, answered she, we had both of us better stayed at home. I had the Misfortune, continued she, to fall into the Hands of a Woman who made me sick with the dull History of her Ancestors, among whom there have been Dukes, Counts, Marquisses, Barons, Chevaliers, and God knows what, and had she not gone through the History of her Family with an astonishing Volubility of Tongue, I should not have been so soon delivered from my Purgatory, and I took Care when she had finished the direct lineal Descent not to give her Time to enter upon the collateral Branches, which I found she intended; for the first Stop she made I started from my Chair, and made but one Step to the Door.

If the Entertainment of a Rake, said I, can be diverting I had it, and I do not know but he made as many Lies upon his Amours, as your Madam did upon her Pedigree. I then told every Word I had heard, and we both agreed that though the Lady was dead, supposing the Intrigue to be true, a Man of
strict

strict Honour would not have even sullied her Memory, and we both heartily hated him for it.

LOVE must be a strange Distemper, said *Arabella*, since it forces Women to break thro' the Ties of Religion and Honour, and I think it is impossible that a Man of Honour can esteem a Woman without Modesty and Virtue. O! said I, this is one of the most whimsical Caprices to which our Hearts are subjected, though I know nothing of the Affair by Experience, yet I cannot but think that Nature has implanted in the two Sexes a violent Inclination one for the other, and this general Propensity is sometimes determined by Causes unknown even to those who feel the Effects: It is scarce to be expected, considering our Frame and Composition, that we shall always prove insensible of those first Impulses, which usually get the Start of Reason, but I am inclinable to think that we have always Strength enough to stop the Progress; Prudence requires that we examine, if Religion and Honour find nothing repugnant in these Beginnings of Inclination, there's no Risk in determining ourselves after such an Enquiry.

THE Passions that spring from such a noble Source usually preserve the Purity of their Origine; on the contrary, if we allow ourselves to be hurried away by blind Inclination, there is no Excesses into which we may not be precipitated, without having foreseen them;

them ; and, what is still worse, the disorderly Passions fortifying themselves quicker than we can imagine, it becomes almost impossible to get the better of them, even when we perceive the Precipices to which they may lead us.

THERE is some Sort of Excuse for a young Woman, said *Arabella*, who is betrayed into Weaknesses by the Torrent of Passion, which in its Infancy (I mean when a Girl first feels a certain Inclination to a particular Man) may not clash with Religion or Honour, but for a married Woman, if she feels the least Tendency in her Heart to love any Man but her Husband, she must crush it in the Bud, and rather make herself miserable by opposing an unhappy Passion, than despicable by giving Way to it.

ON the 28th of *November* we set out from *Lisse*, taking the Road to *Doway*, twenty Miles distant and South of *Lisse*. It is a large populous Town, and strongly fortified. I was told by People of Credit in the Place that it cost the *Allies* Eight thousand Men at least, when they took it from the *French* in the Year 1710, and was retaken again by the Arms of *France* in the Year 1712, after the Separation of the *British* Troops from the rest of the *Allies*, who refused to make a Peace on the Terms proposed by *Britain*. Here is a considerable Seminary of *English Roman Catholics*, founded by *Philip II.* of *Spain*.

FROM

FROM *Doway* we turned off to *Valenciennes*, the Capital of the *French Hainault*, situate on the *Scheld*, and the little River *Rouel* which surround it, and pass through the Streets by several Channels. It is said to have derived its Name from the Emperor *Valentinian* who built it, being pleased with the delightful Situation. It is a large Town strongly fortified and defended by a Citadel, and as it stands in a flat Country abounding with Rivulets, the Grounds of it may be overflowed, and the Approaches rendered exceeding difficult in case of a Siege.

FROM *Valenciennes* our next Stage was to *Bouchain*, a small but strong Town, situate on the River *Scheld* ten Miles South of *Valenciennes*, taken from the *Spaniards* by the *French* in 1676, and confirmed to them by the Treaty of *Nimeguen*, which they remained in Possession of till the Year 1711, when it was retaken by the *Allies*, but retaken the Year thereafter by the *French*; and still remains in their Possession.

FROM *Bouchain* we went to *Aire*, situate on the *Lys* in a Morass, a little strong Town and Castle, taken from the *French* by the *Allies*, but yielded to them again by the Treaty of *Utrecht*.

FROM *Aire* we proceeded to *Cambray*, which is a large well built City on the River *Scheld*, not far from its Source, almost sur-

350 *The TRAVELS of*

rounded by Gardens and fruitful Meadows. It is defended by two Citadels, and regularly fortified; and as the neighbouring Country may be laid under Water, is justly esteemed a dangerous Place to be attacked by an Enemy. It was here the famous Mr. *Fenelon* Archbishop died, and whose Memory will be revered till Time is at an End.

We set out Post after staying two Days at *Cambray* for *Paris*, and visited *Peronne*, *Marche*, *Mondidier* and *Senlis*, which last, is situated ten Leagues to the Northward of *Paris*, on the Side of a Hill, at the Foot whereof, runs the little River *Nonete*. It is of an Oval Figure, encompassed with a Wall, a Ditch, and other Fortifications, the Bastions and half Moons faced with Stone. We viewed the Town before it was dark, and particularly the Ruins of an old Castle, and some other Buildings, which they conjecture were the Works of the Ancient *Romans*.

We set out next Morning for *Paris*, where we arrived safely on the Third of *December* 1729, and set up at the *Hotel Imperiale* in *St Germans* Suburbs. The Moment we arrived, I sent a Billet to Mr *Pigeat*, who happening to be at Home, came directly, and the poor Man was in such Raptures upon seeing me, that he knew not well what he was saying. When he became a little calmer, I hope, Madam said he, before *Arabella*, (whom he knew by a Letter I had wrote him from *Montpelier*,

to

be a Woman) that you have now finished your Travels, and are resolved to appear in a different Dress from what you now have. Yes, yes, Mr *Pigeot* said I, the Travelling Humour is now over, at least as a Man, and I am resolved not to leave my native Country any more; Have you prepared and furnished a House for me, according to my Directions from *London*? Yes, Madam, answered he, every Thing is ready for your Reception, and you have but a very short Way, you know, from this to *Luxemburg Street*, about the Middle of which is your House, with a House-keeper whom I put in it, to light Fires in the Rooms now and then. Let us go, my dear *Arabella* said I, turning to her, to a Place where we shall be more commodiously than here; we directly left the Inn where we were, and went in a Hackney Coach with Mr *Pigeot* to my House, ordering our Baggage to be brought after us. It pleased me extremely well, and the Furniture was genteel and fashionable. I thanked Mr *Pigeot* for his Care, but told him as I was a Stranger, he must take Care to provide us in a Supper. If you will be pleased to tell me, Madam said he, what you would chuse, your Orders shall be obeyed. I ordered what I knew was agreeable to *Arabella*, and he went to give Directions to a Cook, whom he had hired for me.

WHEN

WHEN my Friend and I were by ourselves, I took her in my Arms, My dearest *Arabella*, said I, how pleased should I be to find myself at *Paris*, and at the End of a Wandering Life, with which I have some Time since been wearied, tho' I said nothing, could I have but the Pleasure of your Company; but the Thoughts of your leaving me and going to the South of *France*, is a terrible draw back, or rather sours all the Pleasure I might otherwise propose to myself, in a calm and quiet Life after so much Rambling. My dearest *Alithea*, answered she, we perfectly sympathize in our Thoughts about this terrible Thing called *Separation*, and as I advanced towards *Paris*, the Idea of it made a terrible and melancholy Impression upon my Mind; but I have been thinking of an Expedient which will keep us always together, if you approve of it. Speak, cried I, with Vivacity, I am sure you can propose nothing but what I will chearfully comply with.

As your Affairs said she, or, to speak more properly, as your Estate and mine lie at a great Distance from each other, it cannot be imagined but that we must be at Hand, at least now and then, to inspect into the Management of those to whom we commit the Charge of receiving our Rents, for which Reason I would propose that I should pass six Months of the Year with you here, and you six Months with me in *Languedoc*; by this Means,
be-

besides the Pleasure of being with one another, we shall avoid the extreme Heats in the Place of my Nativity, and all the Fogs, Rain, and other Inclemencies of Weather, to which the Winter Season in the North of *France* is liable. How do you like my Project, added she, looking fixedly on me? I like it so well, answered I, that I will this Minute sign, seal, and deliver, I mean, that provided you will only give me Time to settle my Accounts with Mr *Pigeot*, I will go with you to *Languedoc*, and stay with you there till the warm Weather chases us from that Corner of *France*; but my dear *Arabella*, added I, how shall I make my Appearance at *Montpelier*, after having once passed there for a Man, and how shall I be able to stand the Raillery of your patch'd Lover? It is, replied she, upon his Account as well as others that I would have you appear there in your natural Dress; for my dear *Alitheia*, added she, who knows but the People in that Country have been informed of my Travels with a Person whom they believe to be a Man, and therefore it will be very necessary to undeceive them, that my Character may not suffer; when they come to know your Sex, the worst they can say is, that we are whimsical Creatures. What must be must be, cried I, rather than part with you I will do any Thing, and make the best of a bad Bargain; that is, put the best Face upon my impudent Behaviour the first Time I was at *Montpelier* that I can; I may well be put to the Blush, but I fancy none of your

Lovers will pretend to call me to an Account for carrying you away. They are by no Means blood-thirsty Men, said she, as I told you before, and I believe they will be very well pleased with your Metamorphosis; but whether they be or be not, it is a Matter of great Indifference to me, for I never intend to make any of them my Lord and Master, and if they are such Fools as to renew their old Importunities, I will soon let them know what they are to expect. Let this Kiss, said I, clasping her anew in my Arms, be as a Seal to our Agreement, with this only Reserve that when either of us happens to be in the Humour of Matrimony, after asking, according to our former Convention, the other's Consent, it may be lawful to take unto us Husbands. I do not know, said *Arabella* smiling, whether you are in jest or earnest, but you may be assured that when you find your self disposed for a Husband, I shall not oppose it. I know my own Thoughts just now, said I, but I cannot answer for them two Days hence, so that it is Prudence to make Allowance for the Fickleness of our Sex. Besides I am very much mistaken if the lovely *Arabella* will still be able to defend her Heart against all the Attacks that it will meet with even before she leaves this Place; for I am resolved to produce you at Court, and in all publick Places where Men and Women meet, and if our *Petit-maitres* can see and not love *Arabella*, either they are blind, or I am strangely prejudiced in your Favour. I hope, answered she, that your
Pro-

Prophecy will not hold true; and so sincere I am in what I say, that could I be persuaded of my making Conquests in *Paris*, I would take Care not to throw myself in Temptation's Way; and though I am not as yet too old to renounce all Thoughts of Matrimony, I am much mistaken if it be in the Power of any Man to make me alter my Opinion. Those male Things, said I laughing, are strange Animals, bewitching tempting Devils, and when they have a Plot upon a Woman's Heart, they will transform themselves into a hundred Shapes to get at it, and if they can but make the least Breach *Adieu pannier Vendanges Sont faites*, or farewell Liberty thy Reign is at a Close: But after all, let us not torment our selves with imaginary Fears, and resolve upon this, that we will stand out as long as we can, and never yield but upon honourable Terms. Mr *Pigeot* came in and told us that Supper was on the Table. We both eat very heartily, and during Supper he entertained us with Variety of Events that had happened since my Departure.

NEXT Morning word was brought that a Lady below in a Coach wanted to speak with the *Chevalier de Montferan*, and though she had been told that no such Gentleman lodged here, she insisted that he did, and that she must see him. I gave Orders that the Lady should be brought into a low Parlour, and that the Person she wanted would wait upon her in a Moment. What can be the Mean-

356 The TRAVELS of

Meaning of this Visit, said *Arabella*, some fair Lady, answered I, perhaps from *Italy* or *Spain*, who not able to support your Absence is come to offer you her Heart; but shall I apper as a Man or a Women, said she? We have no Occasion to wear the Mask any longer, answered I, and we will both go and wait upon this Lady as Women, which we did, and were not a little surprized to find our *Brussels Jewels*.

UPON our entering she seemed to be startled, and told us hastily that it was the *Chevalier de Montferan* whom she wanted to see and not his Sister, which this Lady by Resemblance seems to be. Madam, said *Arabella*, you see in me the *Chevalier de Montferan*, and in my Friend here the *Chevalier de Radpont*, whom you may remember to have seen with me at *Brussels*. Curiosity to see different Countries made us travel in Men's Cloaths, but if, as a Woman, I can be of any Service to you in this Place, you may freely command me. She changed Colour twenty times in a Minute, and not being able to restrain her Tears any longer. Alas! said she, how have I been deceived! How unhappy am I! My Weakness, Ladies, continued she, has made me commit a very inconsiderate Step: I must own to my Confusion that the *Chevalier de Montferan* made a Conquest of my Heart, and that I have followed you from Place to Place since you left *Brussels*. I have nothing but
they

the Indulgence of a tender and affectionate Father to trust to, I will go and throw myself at his Feet, confess my Folly, and with Tears beg his Pardon, which I hope, Ladies, you will be so very good as to grant me for my Intrusion. She then made a low Courtesy and went out without giving us Time to make any Reply. How terribly is this poor *Jewish* Girl bit, said I, to meet with nothing but Petticoats when she expected Breeches: O Love! what a Tyrant art thou, and how cruel an Enemy to a Woman's Virtue! had you been but a Man now, my dear *Arabella*, you would have converted this poor *Israelite* to the Christian Faith. I daily pray for the Conversion of the *Jews*, answered she, and this I believe is all I should have done had I really been what this Girl took me to be, for I scarce think a Woman who acts so inconsistently with what Decency and Modesty absolutely require in our Sex, would ever tempt me to come under any matrimonial Engagements with her.

FOR a Fortnight we did nothing but visit all that was worth seeing in and about *Paris*, to satisfy *Arabella's* Curiosity; and as we frequented all publick Entertainments, what I had foretold with respect to *Arabella's* Charms was fulfilled. She soon had Crowds of Admirers, but she was inaccessible, and would by no Means receive any Visits, tho' many Stratagems were laid by Lovers of all Ranks to get into her Company.

I have nothing more to tell the Reader but that we went together to *Montpelier*, where it was generally believed that *Arabella* and I had been married in *Italy*, and some of her disappointed Lovers had so publickly condemned her Conduct, that they were confounded when we returned, and were ashamed to present themselves.

WE remained in *Montpelier* till towards the Middle of *March*, at which Time we returned to *Paris*, where we passed the Summer Season according to our Agreement, which we have regularly observed for several Years, and without the least Thoughts of altering our *Scheme* 'till Death parts us; the longer we are together, the more we love one another, and are happier in our Friendship and Freedom, than we could possibly propose to be in any other Condition of Life. *Arabella's* Temper is sweet with a little Mixture of Reserve; mine is gay with a little of the Ingredient called *Whim*; my Gaiety rouzes her now and then out of a Fit of Thoughtfulness, and her Reserve bridles my Vivacity, so that we play to one another's Hands; and if there be such a Thing as Happiness in Life, we are the Persons who enjoy it.

The E N D.



E R R A T A.

In Page 35, Vol. I. L. 4. for *not read now.*

